



For daily latest books please visit
<https://novelsguru.com/>

Thank you guys for downloading this book from my site please keep visiting <https://novelsguru.com/> for supporting me and also don't forget to share it with your friends.

Dear Friends please download these books direct from <https://novelsguru.com/> bookmark this site for latest African books, and also supporting me Thanks.

ANGEL: SAMMY'S HEART

Written by Precious Moloji

INTRODUCTION:

As i sit on my Grave and wait for him to come and visit. He always brings flowers for me, my Grave is filled with roses Ohh Carl Shaw how i love thee.....As I'm sitting there i see his Ferrari pulling up, i stand up and fix myself..... He gets out of the car and immediately i can see that something is wrong..

His holding a bottle of something with him, his friend Gesh gets out of the passenger's seat and hold him. There's a struggle, there's some argument then he let's him go...

As he is approaching my Grave i can see that his holding a bottle of Jack Daniels whiskey....

He stands at my Grave and looks at it.

Him: You were expecting flowers weren't you?

He is right i was expecting that..

Him: i don't fucken understand how a person could be this selfish!

Another car pulls up, i notice it's his other Friend Tshepiso also known as Tpee...

Carl: i loved You Sammy, you were my heart! I did everything for you and you just fucken....

I could see the anger in his eyes, Carl has always had Anger problems... He threw the bottle of whiskey against the tombstone head that he bought for me which cost 45 000 it was made out of marble.. I see the whiskey running down on the

tombstone..

Me: Kyle!!

His friend Gesh comes to us.

Him: What are you doing man? Do you think that Sammy would appreciate what you doing now? This is not the way to remember her dog!!!!!!!!!!

I see tears falling down from him..

Carl: She literally sent me out of her ward that day dog! She didn't want me there.. Gesh: She didn't want you to see her die because she knew it was gonna kill you....

Typical Tpee was peeing on someone's grave... Gesh: Tpee what the fuck are you doing man? (shouting)

Tpee: They dead Dog!

Gesh: i swear you and Kyle shouldn't drink anymore, i get tired of babysitting yall grownasses man!

Gesh went to tpee...

Carl: i hope that you go straight to hell! I hate you Sammy, or should i say Angel..

He called me with that name, Carl never called me Angel...

I watch him walk away, i knew that we were done for real. Our love was so strong that it conquered everything, what it failed to conquer was death..... I look over and my mom is waiting for me, i know that there's nothing left for me anymore in the world of living, especially because Carl is no longer my heart.

My story starts differently, yes i am dead. I would like to take you all and reflect back on how i lived my life while i was still alive, and what caused my untimely death.

I am Sammy sibiya aka The Angel, and this is my story..

PART 1 ANGEL: SAMMY'S HEART

March 22, 2016 [visionarywritings](#)

When i was young i came to realise how much life can be so cruel. My father walked out on Me and my mother when i was just 8 years old. Life has taught me also how much love does not exist, especially how i witnessed my mother crying everyday because of what we call "love". My mother was just my father's mistress, he had a wife and kids and just used my mother as a booty call. How they met was really not intriguing because my "my father" was a truck driver and always made a stop close to where we lived, he used to eat at some restaurant where my mother used to work as a waitress and that's how they met. My mother was deeply in love, and my father just used her as his booty call someone who he would sleep with with when he made his stop and then continue with his journey. My father promised my mother the world, he promised her that his gonna leave his wife for her, but he never did. My mother believed all those tales that my father told her, i call them tales because he never fulfilled even one.....
Things changed when my mother fell pregnant with me, Ohh

my father changed and became something that my mother didn't know...

He asked my mother to abort a lot of times, he even gave her money but my mother never aborted because she didn't believe in abortion, she was a hardcore Christian....

My mother loved my father more than she loved me although my father got her a nice flat he stopped paying rent when he found out that my mother is pregnant, and mind you my mother went to choose this man over her family and that's how she was disowned by her father, because of loving a married man. From what my mother told me, my father never supported promiscuity....

My mother gave her heart and soul to my father, and when he left she had nothing left. She was devastated and I witnessed her crying every day and not wanting to eat. I never knew that love could be this deep.....

Unfortunately my mother died from all of that, her heart wasn't strong enough to take all the pain that my father caused her. She died of a heart attack...

My father couldn't take me in, I mean how was he gonna explain to his wife how he got a bastard child? No sir he wasn't gonna have that that's when he sold me into prostitution.... I became a prostitute at the age of 13 after my mother's death, he had sold me to a man called "Godfather" he sold me for 30 000.

I wish I could say that Godfather used to beat me, rape me, and abuse me but none of that.. He was more of a father to me than my biological father was to me...

He treated me like his own daughter, he introduced me to his daughter and son. I remember we would go spend Christmas with his ex wife and kids, the only thing that stood in between us was prostitution. Although he was a father to me, but business was business I had to make him money....

What I loved more about Godfather was that he always made

me put school first, when it was time to study he didn't allow any clients to come near me he would have me focused on my books. Although that seems like a good thing, but books and prostitution didn't mix i dropped out in grade 10. Godfather wasn't happy about that, but i promised him that I'll go back to school some day.....

Every Money that made he would give me half, i remember sleeping with some rich man who paid 100 000 for me Godfather gave me 50 000. I was only 16 at that time, and i have held 50000.....

I always got everything i wanted, i was a spoiled prostitute i had 5 bodyguards Godfather made sure i had everything..

All the men worshipped me, they thought that i was an Angel in their lives and that's how i got the name "Angel"..... I could have any man eat at my feet, my beauty, my charm, and beauty intoxicated them....

This men left their wives to come and sleep with them, sometimes they would fight for me, some of them would even pay 500 000 just to talk to me for the whole night and not sleep with me, that's how they worshipped me.....

Godfather would sell me to the highest bidder, he would literally have an auction for me. Ministers, business men, doctors, etc would be there competing to sleep with me.....

.

I sat there looking at his picture and smiling. This man was like a father to Me, always protected me and always made sure that this men used a condom when sleeping with me.....

Today I'm 21 years old and he is dead. He was shot on his way home the culprits were never found.....

I am moving into a prostitution house that i have no information about, it is owned by some white woman who is originally from philly, her name is Lady moghana...

I hear she has a big house and the house is filled with prostitutes, and from what i heard she couldn't wait to have me. Apparently other pimps wanted me too but she paid good money for me...

I took my last look at Godfather's house because this is the last time I'm ever gonna see it. I took my luggage bag and went to wait outside for my ride, she had organised someone to come and fetch Me.....

I was very nervous especially since I don't know how life is at Lady moghana's house and i have never been in the presence of other prostitutes I've always been alone..

While i was standing at the gate, a white Cadillac car pulled up next to me, and some woman came out. She was black, i thought lady moghana was English.....

She was beautiful and wore as if like she was Michelle Obama or Queen Elizabeth. She was wearing a black designer dress with a black coat that was longer than the dress, it reached her knees while the dress was short. The coat had a beetle pin just right above her right breast.....

She was wearing black stockings and black heels. She also wore a black hat with black gloves and a small black clutch bag.....

She had long natural hair that she let float around under the hat, she had black sun glasses on...

She made her way to me, and took off her gloves. Her: You are Angel right?

I nodded my head yes..

She smiled and hugged me then kissed me on my cheeks you know that British way of greeting people.....

Her: it was really hard finding this place that's why we late.

She had the British accent a bit, i liked how fluent her English was.. Her: Ohh forgive me Darling were are my manners, i am lady Ndloe.. Me: i thought Lady moghana was coming to fetch

me

Her: forgive her darling she had some business to attend too. I am her right hand woman.. That's a polite way of saying "im her side kick"

I smiled at her....

Her: Are you ready to go? Me: Yes

She looked at the car and the driver got out.. He was white

Ndloe: This is Richardson he will be your personal chauffeur...

He took my hand and kissed it..

Him: Pleasure meeting you my lady..

Such a gentleman, i think I'm gonna enjoy this new life.....

We didn't drive straight to the house, we went to some hotel that was classy abs elegant... They took off her jacket at the door and we were shown our table..

Ndloe: I'm sure that you are very hungry darling..

I just smiled.. My cheeks were hurting from all that smiling...

This woman's presence was a bit intimidating, i wonder how Lady moghana is.... We were given the menus, i didn't even recognised any dish from the menu..

What was going through my mind was "Sammy don't embarrass yourself"... The waitress brought us a bottle of wine...

Waitress: finest wine from Scotland Ndloe

gave her that ever warm smile of hers.. Ndloe: i will be the judge of that..

The waitress opened the wine and poured for Ndloe, ndloe took a sip and was gently toying with the wine glass... Ndloe: How old is it? Waitress: 1964

I could see how nervous the waitress was, even her voice was breaking.... Ndloe put the glass down.

Ndloe: not the best wine I've tested but i guess it will do.. The waitress flashed a smile and went.. Ndloe: Are you ready to order dear?

I didn't wanna say no, what if she thinks I'm dumb and ends up not wanting to take me to Friend-Segal.. That's what the house is called...

Me: Yes i am..

Ndloe raised up her hand and the waitress came back...Ndloe: i will have risotto and scallops.. The waitress looked at me..

Me: I'll have risotto too.

Waitress: 2 risottos and one scallop coming up.. Ndloe put her menu Away..

Her: Risotto that's a clever choice, mostly because they add white wine In that which brings out the flavour of the dish..... I smiled at her.

Me: That's why i chose it..

She put her hand under her chin, and gave me a smile..

Her: I'm thinking that you gonna choose the Wellington for

Entree?Me: Gosh you have read my mind..

Her: i think i like you...

This was just a bizarre moment..

The risotto was brought to us, and funny enough it's just rice with lobster but it tasted nice....For Entree i had a Wellington while she had Sea-bass which was just fish.. The Wellington was meat rolled up in dough, it was more like a pie..

..

After finishing eating, Richardson drove us to Friend-Segal..

And Ohh my God the house was like the playboy mansion.

Everything was state of the art.. We walked in and i don't wanna mention the inside it was just breath taking...

She walked me upstairs to my bedroom and it was lovely better than the one i had at Godfather's house. Had a flat screen TV that curved on the wall, my bathroom was just wow.. The duvet was pure white with alot of pillows, and the smell Gosh it smelled great...Ndloe: Do you like it?

Me: i love it.. It's beautiful..

Her: Good.. Now come you have to meet the girls..

Ohh i completely forgot about the girls...we walked into the lounge and the girls were already lining up to meet me.. I thought that it was gonna be alot of girls but they were just 3....and they were all still wearing pjs it was like 16:00...

Ndloe:

Ladies i am very disappointed, Pyjamas at this time?

All: Sorry lady Ndloe...

Her: We have heard this conversation over and over again, stop partying this much! And

Peejay i know it's you whose bringing this bad behaviour.. The Peejay girl looked at her all shocked.. Peejay: But Lady Ndloe..

Ndloe: Don't talk back at me... I'm gonna let this slide, just this once I'm not gonna tell Lady moghana..

All: Thank you Lady Ndloe.. Ndloe: And were is Remooh?

Peejay: Still sleeping..

Ndloe: At this time? Ohh my goodness someone go get her!

Before someone moved the Remooh girl walked in... She looked very young like she's the youngest of them all..

Ndloe: Nice of you to join us Remooh.. She kept quiet..

Ndloe: Now ladies. Meet our new member of the family. She put her hand around my shoulders

Her: Her name is Sammy but goes by the name "Angel" Peejay giggled..

Ndloe: Do you have any contributions to the conversation

Peejay?

Peejay: Me? Ohh no lady Ndloe sorry I'm just wondering how she can be an Angel while she's breaking every code in the Bible especially being a prostitute couldn't she find a better nickname?

Reemoh laughed too. I looked at Peejay she was a BBW (black beautiful woman) from that statement i could tell that she doesn't like me and sadly there's nothing i can do about it, because she can really kick my ass to her I'm just an Ant..

PART 2 ANGEL: SAMMY'S HEART

March 22, 2016 [visionarywritings](#)

Ndloe: Peejay that is not how we talk, I would like you to apologise to Angel. Peejay: i apologise..

Her apology was not sincere at all. Me: Its okay

Ndloe: Anyway this is Peejay, kresi, melody, and Reemoh.

They all work for Lady moghana. Me: Nice meeting you all.

Reemoh and Peejay didn't like me at all, I could just feel the vibe from them... Ndloe: i am going to make a few calls, now i want everyone to behave.

She looked at Peejay.

Her: You heard that Peejay? BEHAVE.

She then walked out. I stood there like a statue, while those girls were starring at me as if like i was at the museum or something..

Reemoh: Let me just go and get some sleep again.. She looked at me and sent out a sarcastic laugh. Her:

Angel, which heaven did you fall from?

She literally bumped me off the way... I looked down and rolled my eyes.

Me: Oookay..

Peejay followed, but stopped before exiting. Her:

Melody are you coming bitch?

She said that with her back facing us...

Melody didn't waste time, she rushed to the door and went out with Peejay... I was now left with Kresi, i didn't know how she

was like.

Her: Don't mind them, Peejay is always like this to everyone especially when you are still new here..

Me: Then remind me to stay out of her way. She laughed.

Her: would you like to go out? Maybe grab something to drink, it's kind of boring here. Me: I'd like that...

...

I walked up to my room and freshened up, it was now around 18:00. I love drinking and partying it kinda like gets me through everything that's happening in my life. Alcohol relaxes me and makes me forget about the kind of life that I'm living...

I wore a short long sleeve dress, that was open at the back. I wore black stockings and black knee boots. I curled my weave and opened a line at the front just make it come to the sides.. I put on make up with a red lipstick and big black hoop earrings...

I took my clutch bag and went to wait for Kresi downstairs....

She came down and she looked sexy too..

She was wearing black leather like leggings, a white crop tee that revealed her belly ring. She wore white knee boots that had black spots and she had a ponytail..

Her: Are you ready to go? Me:

Wow you look beautiful Her:

So do you..

I smiled at her and we walked out. We cannot go anywhere on our own, wherever we go Richardson has to drive us and he was already waiting for us.... We got inside the Cadillac and went.. Me: So were are we going?

Her: some other club that's called "club kisses" Me: sounds interesting.

Her: it is.....

We got there, and it was a dope club. It wasn't full I'm guessing not everyone can afford to come here...

We sat at the bar and got us cocktails.. Kresi: Look at them hunks girl I took a sip on my cocktail..

Kresi: i might land myself a hot guy here that i can marry.. Me: yeah.. Right.

Her: What's wrong? You sound as if like you are not moved by this topic. She's right i was not moved at all.

Me: Look at us Kresi we are prostitutes no guy would wanna Marry us, i mean who would

wanna Marry a prostitute?

I said that while giggling but it wasn't a sincere giggle....

Her: Don't do that to yourself sweety.. We women we should believe in love despite our lifestyles..

I had tears now, but i was trying soo hard to hold them back. I looked up for a while.

Me: If you have seen what I've seen, then you wouldn't believe in love either... She held my hand.

Her: Wanna talk about it?

I wiped my tears. Me:

rather not..

Her: Then let's go and Have fun, we here for fun and not

tears.. We stood up and hit the dance floor... Me:

kinda hard dancing when you still sober Her: You wanna drink?

Me: Yeap i came here to drink..

We went and drank, we danced, we just had soo much fun i didn't wanna Leave.....

When we left we didn't go home straight, we passed by at some tattoo shop and Kresi literally forced me to get a tattoo of an Angel on my ankle and a belly ring.....

When we were done we went home....

We opened the door and just fell inside, we were laughing.

Kresi: Shhhhh you'll wake everyone up.

We got up from the floor and went upstairs... before we got far Lady Ndloe called us, she

was in the lounge. Kresi: here we go.. We went up to her.

She was sitting at the dinning room table and drinking tea, while wearing her gown.

Her: Do you know that Lady moghana arrived a few hours ago? If she could see you girls like this. Hell is gonna break loose.

She looked at Kresi

Ndloe: You know her Kresi! Kresi: Yes u do

Ndloe: Then why are you acting like this? Kresi looked down..

Ndloe: Go to your rooms and sleep, we'll talk tomorrow...

We walked upstairs and hugged each other goodnight.. As i was walking to my room i passed by at Peejay's bedroom it was next to mine.....

I heard her screaming, it was not a sexual scream it was more as if like someone was beating her because I also heard things breaking and falling..... Peejay: You are going to kill me, please stop!!

I felt a hand touching me on my shoulder i turned and it was Ndloe... Her: Go to your room..

I went to my room, i couldn't sleep what i heard was

terrifying...after a while of just laying on my bed i heard a siren
i looked through my window saw an Ambulance....

After like 30min i heard noise in the corridor. I got up and
opened my door to see what's going on. We saw Peejay being
carried out by paramedics she looked badly beaten up....

Melody: What happened?

Ndloe: Girls go to your bedrooms..

Some nigga got out of Peejay's room he was buttoning his shirt and his hands were bloody. He looked scary with a huge scar on his cheek...

I just remembered that the life of prostitution is very dangerous..

PART 3 ANGEL: SAMMY'S HEART

March 22, 2016 [visionarywritings](#)

A meeting was called in the morning, lady moghana wanted to speak to us about what happened to Peejay....

We all gathered downstairs, waiting for her.. I was surprised at the woman who came downstairs she looked nothing like the person i had in mind. I was expecting someone who wears and walks like Queen Elizabeth or Oprah, but she looked nothing like that... She was wearing a high waist jean that took out the shape of her Ass, and curves perfectly.

She was very thick believe me, had a body to die for. The way that her Jean was so tight you could literally see the shape of her vagina at the front. She was wearing a shot boob tube white t-shirt, she also had big breasts. She had a flat tummy, this woman was just too perfect she was a Goddess. She had long black hair, her make up was nicely done you would deny that she's old because she didn't look old at all... She was wearing white high heels too..

Her: Good morning We greeted her back.

Her: i apologise for waking all of you up this early, but after what happened yesterday I'm sure everyone didn't have a good night sleep. So i figured that it would be a great relief to everyone if this matter could be addressed now rather than later... Everyone nodded.

Her: most of you know that i hate betrayal, i hate dishonesty but most of all i hate people who are not loyal.

The house maid walked in with a glass of red wine, the wine glass was very big. She gave it to lady moghana.

Moghana: Thank you Patricia.

It is 6am and this woman is drinking already. She paced around the room.

Moghana: Peejay was a prostitute from the streets. I took her in, gave her everything i made her glamorous and wanted. I treated her as if like she was my daughter believe you me ladies i loved that girl..

She took a sip of the wine.

Her: Unfortunately she betrayed me. She tried stealing 250 000 from me.. Everyone was shocked except for me.

Her: Ohh yes she did, not only that but she also tried to have me killed! I'm still trying to processes everything.

She sipped on her wine again...

Her: i had to teach her a lesson, and what happened last night taught her a lesson that she will never forget!

So lady moghana had Peejay beaten up?

Her: Let it be a lesson to you too who is thinking of Betraying me, i am going to kill you! She meant that because she looked very serious..

Lady Ndloe walked in and whispered something into her ear..

Moghana: Show her in (whispering) Lady Ndloe left..

Moghana: Your nurse is here to give you guys the injection..

Injection? What injection?

The nurse walked in, Lady moghana sat down on the couch drinking her wine... Nurse: Good morning ladies.. Let's get started.

She opened her brief case and prepared everything. We were getting the contraceptive injection. Now i have never prevented because Godfather always made sure that all the niggas i sleep with use protection...

Haike she gave us the injection, shit was painful as hell.. After that she left... Moghana: our meeting is done, now fuck off!!.

Such a dismal, she called my name as we were walking upstairs. I stopped and looked at her...

Her: get ready we going to have breakfast together in a while.. I just nodded and went upstairs to my room..

This woman was something else, Godfather has never treated me like this i was actually scared of her...

I bathe and just put on normal clothes. I wore a denim short, with a long sleeve grey t-shirt and grey sandals. I took my bag and went to her downstairs.....

We walked out to the car, and Richardson drove us to the restaurant were we was to have breakfast.

..

At least the restaurant had food that i was familiar with.

Moghana: Its a beautiful day isn't it? Me: It is indeed..

She took off her shades and looked at me..

Her: i am the famous lady moghana... I could see that.

Her: first of all i am really sorry about what happened to Godfather i heard of how he was killed and..Such people should be hanged.

Me: Thank you..

Her: Angel i know alot about you, that is why i spent soo much money in buying you, 3million..

My eyes widened.

Her: that is how much i needed you on my team.. Our food came. Full English bra with drinks..

Her: all those girls up in my house are useless to me. They don't make me much money sometimes i have to take out money from my own pocket..

Me: That's sad...

Her: That is why you are soo important to me, you don't know how much i need you... She drank her juice.

Her: originally i was born and raised in philly not much of a good place to be. Then i was 15 i moved to New York, i started off as a stripper i was only 15 years old. No boyfriend, no family, no nothing just me alone..

Looks like she's been through alot.

Her: i then became a prostitute, then my last profession was being a pornstar you should check out my porn videos online...

Me: Wow!

Her: i used to make alot of money, I was wanted soo bad by different men my life was just too amazing..

She then looked at me.

Her: You could be like me Angel. I have been watching you all this years while you were with Godfather, you make all this men tremble and submit to you with your beauty. You intoxicate them and send chills down their spines..

I can give you a good life, one that even tops the kardashians..

Allow me to let you experience life in a luxurious way.

Yooh she was just coming down to fast, i drank juice... Me:

Wow this is just overwhelming.. Her: i..

Her phone rang.. She answered.

Her: Moghana... Ohh yes... I'll be right there.. She hunged up then stood up.

Her: i have to leave, Richardson will drive you home. She came and kissed me goodbye.....

I didn't finish my breakfast, i also left but instead of going home i asked Richardson to drive me to the mall were i did a bit of shopping.....

When i was done i just walked up to some bench and sat down, trying to think with my eyes closed.....

While i was thinking i heard someone clearing their throat. I opened my eyes and my my my

Mr man stood before me... He looked soo yummy..
He smiled at me, and his smile could make every Girl's knees weak... I sat up straight.

Him: Sorry to interrupt your peaceful moment but..
He reached out in his pocket and his hand came out with an earring.. Him: i believe this belongs to you...

I touched my ears, and i was missing an earring.. Me:
Ohww uhm Thank you..

I took the earring... He started walking away but then stopped and came back.. Him: would you like to grab some coffee?

Is he asking me out? Am i supposed to say yes?

PART 4 ANGEL: SAMMY'S HEART

March 23, 2016 [visionarywritings](#)

Mr man stood in front of me waiting for me to answer him..

Ohh Lord he was soo gorgeous, it was as if like i was starring at Paul walker's twin brother. He was a black suit, I'm thinking he has a fancy job...

Him: And? Me: i...

I cleared my throat.. I have never been in a situation were a guy just wanna have coffee and not sleep with me...

Me: i Really don't know.. You look like a busy person. He chuckled.

Him: I'm the boss were i work, so they will survive a few minutes without me.. Me: Why do you want to have coffee with me?

Him: Because you look like you could use a cup of coffee...

Ohh God his not gonna stop, i might as well say yes.. I stood up and we started walking..

Him: I'm Chris by the way. Chris Botha.. Me: I'm An.. I'm Sammy..

Him: Nice meeting you Sammy

Me: Same here...

We got into some coffee shop and sat down..... Him: Let me go get two coffees He stood up and went..

Me: Calm down Sammy...

.

He came back after a while with two cups of coffee..

Him: here you go..

Me: Thank you.

I took a sip.

Him: How is it?

Me: Its good..

He punched the air.

Him: Then I'm good in guessing what kind of coffee you like..

I blushed and looked down...

Him: Sammy... Sammy..

He looked at me and smiled.. Me: What?

Him: Its nothing.

Me: It cannot be nothing..

Him: have you ever tried modelling? Me: No..

Him: You should.

Me: I'm not into modelling..

Him: with that body, you really should be modelling.. I blushed even more..

Him: Then her cheeks turn pink.. Me: Stop it! (Smiling)

Him: if I'm not being too forward, if you not modelling then what do you do for a

living? Here comes that question, the question that i truly hate.... I can't tell him that I'm a prostitute. Me: i..

His phone rescued me when it rang...

He took it out while still looking at me. Him:

Excuse me i have to answer this.. He stood up and went out...

This is my cue to run away... I stood up and Walked out unnoticed.

I quickly went to the car, and instructed Richardson to drive straight away... Richard: Is everything okay Madam? Me: Just drive!!

He didn't ask any further questions he just drove.....

We got home and i Walked inside. I could hear the noise from the door, the noise was coming from the lounge. Someone was playing "Pour it up_Rihanna".....

I walked up to the lounge and i was shocked to see Lady moghana twerking and drinking, she looked a bit drunk... Her:

Hey Angel!
Me: Hey..

Her: Melody made me some real money.. Do you know that bitch was a virgin? Some nigga showed up, he was shirtless..

Moghana: Did you have fun?

Him: i did but you know how Virgins are! He looked at me while biting his lower lip.. Him: And who is this Sexy lady?

Moghana: That's Angel, she recently joined us.. Him: i would like to take her for a ride sometime.. Moghana: Anytime..

Him: How about this Saturday, I'm attending some art exhibition thingy i need a date Moghana: She's all yours..

He walked up to me and kissed on my cheek while his hand squeezed my Ass..

Him: See you on Saturday..

He then went back to moghana.. Me: Where is Melody lady moghana? Her: Somewhere upstairs..

I quickly walked upstairs to her room, and she was laying in bed crying while Kresi was cleaning the blood off her legs....

I went up to them.. She was crying hysterical while naked, she looked like she was in pain. Melody: He hurt me Sammy...

She had marks on her neck... Kresi also had tears...

Me: How can Lady moghana allow this to Happen?

Kresi: Because she doesn't care about anyone other herself and her money!!

Looking at melody reminded me the first time i slept with a guy.. The road to breaking my virginity wasn't pleasant at all.....

I walked out of her room all angry, i felt going to moghana and strangling her!..... I stood by the stairs looking at her twerking while that old guy who probably Have kids and a wife was busy spanking her Ass...

I stood there and said a silent prayer..... "Lord please help me not to commit murder".

PART 5 ANGEL: SAMMY'S HEART

March 23, 2016 [visionarywritings](http://visionarywritings.com)

I laid in my bed the whole day, with lots of thoughts in my

head..I heard a knock at my door, i sat up straight.

Me: Come in..

Kresi walked in..

Me: How is Melody?

She came and sat next to me.. Her:

She fell asleep.

Me: That's better

Her: But she's still gonna think of the trauma when she Wakes up..

Me: first it was Peejay, now melody is this woman trying to kill us? Kresi shrugged her shoulders..

Me: Where is Remooh i haven't seen her for a while

Her: She's coming back tomorrow. She was with her pimp this whole time..She looked at me..

Kresi: has she set you up with anyone yet?

Me: Agh just the same guy who fucked Melody. I'm supposed to go with him to an artexhibition

Kresi: after all that melody has been through, lady moghana has the nerve to do this again..Me: You know i have 500 000 that Godfather left for me. I feel like just dropping this life and starting afresh..

Kresi: Shame Lady moghana will never let you go.Me: She said she bought me for 3mill Kresi:

probably bought you from a pimp..

Me: i just wish that someone can do something about her Kresi: me too.. She stood up.

Her: Let me go.. She has set me up with some minister....

—

—

—

The week went by nothing exciting happened, just lady moghana drinking her life away everyday....

Saturday finally came, have to go with that guy to the art exhibition..

I prepared myself. Was wearing a purple tight long dress with purple heels.. I wasn't looking forward to this date but there's nothing i can do.....

I took my bag and went downstairs, the ladies were watching
Tv moghana was with him....Me: I'm ready to go..

They all turned and looked at me.

Kresi: You look great..

Me: Thank you..

Reemoh: She looks sexually frustrated..

I gave her a weird. Lady Ndloe walked in..Ndloe: Good evening We greeted her back.

Ndloe: all of you will be happy to know that Peejay is coming home on Monday.. Remooh was thrilled..

Ndloe: She's recovering very well and the doctor said there's no point in keeping her in the hospital..

Lady moghana's phone beeped,she looked at it and then smiled.. Moghana: His here, Ndloe please show him in Ndloe: Yes mam..

I saw Melody getting a bit uncomfortable. Kresi put her hand around her shoulders... He came into the lounge. There was this bad aura about this guy. I didn't like him at all. He was one of those niggas with big tummies and alot of jewellery like Gorgie zamdela... He took off his hat.

Him: Ladies

Lady moghana stood up,and went up to him..Moghana: france.. They hugged and kissed..

Moghana: always a pleasure to see you... He looked at me...

Him: Miss Angel, look at you..

He was going around in circles busy checking me out..Him: She's a blessing

Moghana: Ain't she?Him: Shall we?

I faked a smile..

He held me by my hand and we started walking out...

Moghana: Can i please speak to my girl before she leaves

France: I'll be in the car..He walked out to his car..

Lady moghana held my hand..

Him: Go make me proud Angel. If you good to him he will give us alot of money. France is very rich and his not shy when it comes to spending money.

Me: I'll do as you say...

Moghana: i hope you are wearing a sexy number underneath that dress.. Me:i am..

She kissed me on my cheek and then i Walked out.....

He was driving a Mercedes-Benz E-class..Actually he wasn't driving he had a chauffeur...I opened the door and went inside.

Him: before we leave i have a gift for you..

He handed me a small box.. I opened it and it was a diamond necklace with matching diamond earrings..

Me: Wow..

Him: You like them? Me:

Alot..

Him: I`m happy..

He signalled to the driver, and the driver started the car and drove away....

He ran his hands on my thighs, then put his hand underneath my dress and made it to my Bumshort....

It was dark in the car, so i just looked away and closed my eyes..

Everytime when this man violate me, i always try to think of something else so that i don`tfocus on what`s happening.....

.

We arrived at the art gallery, i fixed my dress i really didn`t know what happened because i was all up in my thoughts.

Him: You clean, i love a woman who shaves down there..I just gave him a fake smile...

We got out of the car and went inside... It was beautiful the was alot of pictures hanging

around, sophisticated people were there i felt like i didn`t belong.....

France: Now i need to find my daughter... He looked around.. Him: And the she is

We walked up to her.. She was busy talking with some white people.....

France: Mandy
She turned around and looked at us.... Her:
Daddy..

They hugged.. She looked young was probably in her mid 20s. She looked like a spoiled brat, you know the daddy`s Princess type of girl... Her: Thank you for coming daddy

France: i wasn`t gonna miss it for the world... She looked at me, it wasn`t a friendly look..

France: Ohh Princess, meet my friend Angel..

She looked at me from head to toe.. Her: What happened to

Gugu?

France: We just didn't work out. Her: Can i talk to you in private? France: Ofcause...

He kissed me on my cheek..

Him: just mingle around

They went, i looked around i didn't fit here.. I went and took a glass of champagne and just went to look at some painting..

Artists like painting complicated things, I couldn't make out what it is...

As i was looking at the painting i heard a voice behind me..

Voice: It represents happiness and pain at the same time.. Her smile convince us that she's happy but that red line across her heart tells us a different story it represents her pain... I

turned around and i couldn't believe who it was.. It was Chris.

Eish i was so embarrassed especially how i dodged him.. Me:

And we meet again

Him: You know what they say, mountains don't meet but people do..

I held on to my glass and looked down.. Sometimes it's hard looking at him that's how hot he is..

Me: about the other day i am..

Him: Let's not go there let's focus on something else.. His suit

Lord Jesus have Mercy, he was just too perfect. Him: i didn't

know that you were into art

Me: There's alot of things you don't know about me.. He chuckled, my knees were weak..

He took my bag, opened it and got my phone out.. Me: What are you doing?

He gave me the hand.. After being on it he put it next to his ear.. Then after he hung up and put it in my bag and handed it

to me.... Me: What were you doing?

Him: Making sure that I get your numbers before you disappear on me again.. His friends started calling him..

Him: i have to go..

He kissed me on my cheek. Him: I'll call you..

He started walking away, this guy was so bold! Leaving me standing there with a smile on

my face.

PART 6 ANGEL: SAMMY'S HEART

March 25, 2016 visionarywritings

The exhibition was going fine but mina i was very bored shame, France was not back yet and i was just starring at Chris mingling with his friends..

After a while he looked straight in my direction and i looked away making it seem as if like i wasn't starring at them...

France came to me...

Him: Sorry Angel my daughter had me meeting alot of her people I faked a smile..

Me: Its fine..

He kissed me on my cheek. I was still starring at Chris. The way he was smiling and talking, that man was charming.....

Mandy went and stood at the front, slightly tapping her champagne glass with a fork..Mandy: May i please have everyone's attention...

We all kept quiet and looked at her..

Her: first of all, i wanna thank everyone for coming to support me. Especially my daddy who made all of this possible for me. Thank you daddy..

She pointed at him and everyone looked in our direction..

When Chris looked at us i looked down not because i was blushing but because I was

embarrassed with him seeing me standing next to a man who is old enough to be my dad...Mandy: i also wanna thank my mother, unfortunately she's not here she had to attend some business overseas... She then looked at Chris...

Her: We have a very special guest today With us.. Chris Botha world known and most sought after Fashion designer Ofcause after Michael kors. Not only that but the founder of the runway boutique and editor in chief of The run away magazine, he owns the whole runaway

Ave yall...

People started clapping, he just waved his hand...Ohh so this is the famous Chris Botha. He also has his own models who do catwalks in support of his line... Everyone wants to be like him, every girl wants to marry him.....

I found myself smiling again while i was looking at him...

Mandy: We will begin with the Auction..

We all took our seats... The first paint was brought in...

Mandy: We all know Mona Lisa right? People nodded their heads..

Her: This painting was inspired by her.

The painting was the same painting that Chris was explaining to me..

Mandy: This woman's smile hides a lot of pain, although her smile misleads us into thinking that she's happy, but in actual fact she is not. The red line across her heart tells us more about her pain, how much her heart is bleeding.... This painting we are going to start off with R5000..

Chris raised up his hand.. Mandy: Can I get 10 000? I leaned over to France.. Me: I like this painting..

Him: Are you sure?

Me: Yes i feel like I can relate to it.. France raised up his hand... France: 15 000

I looked at him shocked.. I just said i like the painting i didn't say he must buy it... Chris turned around and looked at us..

Mandy: Can i have 20 000?

Chris: 30 000!

France looked at him.. Mandy: Can i have 35 000?

France: 50 000!

Haibo this men!! Chris:

70 000!

France: 100 000

They were just calling out this huge figures like they meant nothing! Chris: 250 000

France: 300 000!

Me: France really it's fine you don't have to bu.. Chris: 500 000!

France: 700 000! Chris stood up..

Chris: 1.5mill

France looked at him... Mandy:

Can i have 2mill?

Nobody raised up their hand..

Mandy: 1.5mill going once.. Twice.. Sold! Everyone started clapping...

Chris fixed his suit jacket while giving France a weird then he sat down... I cannot believe he spent 1.5mill for a mere painting???

France was boiling inside....

..

Haike the Auction went on for an hour, i was soo bored that i ended up going to Facebook....

When it was finally done, we were told to help ourselves to the food and drinks... Waitresses brought in platters and drinks, the was tables all around..

We stood up and went to dish up, Mandy was busy talking and hugging Chris maybe she was just congratulating him for

buying the painting.... France: Are you still Okay?

Me: Yes i am..

After a while Mandy came to us..

Mandy: Mom says fetch her from the airport..

France: i thought she said she's coming back next week

Mandy: Change of plans..

France: Has she landed yet?

Mandy: like an hour ago, and you don't know how much she hates waiting.. France put his plate on the table..

He leaned and whispered in my ear.

Him: Sorry about this but i have to go my wife is crazy.. Don't worry I'm still gonna send Lady moghana cash.. Me: Its fine

He kissed me on my cheek, and left....

Mandy looked at me as if like i pooped on myself then clicked her tongue and Walked away.....

The was nothing left for me, so i Walked out.....

I stood by the road hoping for a taxi to come, busy starring at my wrist watch... Voice: There's no taxis at this time...

Ahhhhhhhhhhhh Chris.. I turned around and he was standing behind me with his hands in his pockets..

Him: Can i please drive you home? I just nodded my head...

His car was brought to us he was driving a koenigseg!!! I was lost for words that car costs

around R20mill.... He opened the door for me and i went inside..... He got to the drivers seat and started driving....

Him:

How did you find the whole exhibition? Me: It was...

His watch beeped.. He looked at it and pressed it..

Him: Talk to me!

A female voice started talking..

Her: Sir I'm at your house right now to deliver the book... He slightly hit the starring wheel..

Him: Okay Keisha I'm on my way.. He looked at me..

Him: Do you mind if we stop by at my place? Me: No its okay....

.

..

We got to his place, and it was a Penthouse.. A girl was standing at the kitchen holding some book...

Him: Sorry Kay i was at some art exhibition Kay: Its Okay sir..

He took the book from her... Him: See you on Monday Her:
Good night sir..

She walked away... He looked at me while biting his lower lip
and squinting his eyes.. I was busy telling myself not to blush..

Him: i just need 10min please, I need to make a few notes on
this book..I smiled at him..

Him: Make yourself at home..

He walked upstairs.. I looked around it was a dope place with
paintings all around.. I threw myself on the couch..

I didn't know what i was gonna do for the next 10min...

PART 7 ANGEL: SAMMY'S HEART

March 25, 2016 [visionarywritings](#)

He came down after 30min, i was watching Tv.. Him: Sorry
that i took long

Me: Its okay...

Him: Want something to eat? Me:

No thanks.

He got a bottle of water from the fridge then started
yawning....

This guy looked tired and i can sense that his not going to take
me home... Me: You not driving me home are you?

Him: Can i do that tomorrow? Me: Its fine..

He sat down..

Him: What are you watching? Me: Agh nothing interesting..

He looked at me..

Him: Maybe we can play an interesting game... Me:

What game?

He went and got it, it was twister..

He set it up and we started playing... Unfortunately my dress
was too tight it restricted me.....

Him: i can borrow you one of my shirts.. Me:

Okay..

We walked upstairs to his bedroom, and he got me a white
shirt...I went to his bathroom and changed, at least the shirt

was above knee level.....

We went back downstairs to play twister.....

I have never had this fun in a long time, we were all falling and our legs would tangle it was just nice...

The last round we had he fell on top of me.. We were both laughing..

Me: i think that's it for me, i don't wanna wake up with an aching body.. He chuckled..

Him: Then we'll call it a night..

Me: Good night then... Him: night..

He was looking me deep in my eyes, then after he leaned closer and we kissed. My whole body started shivering, he was sending chills down my spine... This is my first time responding to a man caressing my body and kissing me.....

He was very gentle on how he was touching me as if like I'm fragile and I'm gonna break... We continued kissing and him running his hands around my whole body, it was almost as if like we were in the bold and the beautiful.....

Before i knew it we were both naked, and he entered me....

Having sex with a guy I've known for like 24hrs is not a biggy for me, i mean I'm a prostitute after all...

He was moving up and down slowly Ohh God he was very gentle i have never had a man make love to me like this before.... I was truly enjoying our session.

He was soo good that he made sure we both come at the same time.....

He was on top of me, breathing heavily on my neck...

I didn't know what the next move was so i just laid there waiting for him..

Him: How about we go and take a shower Me: Okay..

I got up and put on his shirt again, then we walked upstairs with him behind me....

We got there and went inside the shower... We had to Have one last round in there, I swear Chris was amazing. He made me feel love and wanted, for the first time in my life i didn't feel used....

When we were done we went and laid on his bed, with my head on top of his chest. He was busy kissing my forehead and brushing my hair..

Him: I've always dreamt of this ever since from the first day i laid my eyes on you..

Me: You've always dreamt of getting inside my panties? He laughed..

Him: No its not like that..

I lifted my head and looked at him.. Me: Its like what?

Him: i just wanted to get to know you, you really caught my attention that day

I smiled..

Him: We should thank your earring that brought us together

We both laughed... Me:

We should indeed..

He yawned again...

Him: Let's sleep plus I'm tired and it's late... Me: Okay

He kissed me goodnight... I went back to sleeping on his chest with a smile on my face....

..

I was woken up by the sun shining through in the morning.. I slowly opened my eyes and i was hugging a pillow. I ran my hand on Chris side and he wasn't around.. I yawned and got up all stretching..

He was sitting opposite me with a board in front of him, a paint brush and some paint.. He looked at me and giggled... Me:

What?

Him: You woke up just in time..Me: in time for?

Him: Come and see

I got out of bed and went to him.. What i saw on the board made my jaw drop.... He had painted me while i was sleeping..

Him:

What do you think?

Me: Wow it's perfect..

He got me to sit ontop of him, with my back facing him and his hands around my waist.. He kissed me on my neck..

Me: i didn't know that you know how to paint....Him: Its just a hobby of mine.. It relaxes Me..

Me: Thank you for painting Me... Him: You welcome

He started biting me on my neck and i was laughing.. Me: Stop it!!

Him: Go and bath while i go and prepare breakfast... Me:

Okay and i can't wait to show my sisters this painting Him:

Ohh no its mine..

I looked at him confused...

He got me off him. He took the painting and hanged it on the wall..Me: How can you paint but refuse to give me the

painting?

Him: Because i wanna look at you when you not around your beauty is just intoxicating..I blushed...

He came to me, and held my hands. Him:
be mine..
Yooh that was quick, and i haven't really did this dating thing..
Me: i don't know Chris..
He put his hands around my waist... Him:
Let's just try and see were it gets us.. I looked down..
Him: Please
Agh why not? I smiled Me:
Okay..
He smiled at me too and kissed me..
Him: Let's go and run you a bubble bath..
We walked out to the bathroom with him hugging me from
behind.. Him: "no staying up at night" Me:
"no spanking my behind" Him: "no kissing in the dark"
We walked to the bathroom busy singing like that

PART 8 ANGEL: SAMMY'S HEART

March 25, 2016 [visionarywritings](#)

I spent 2 days with Chris and it was heavenly. This guy knows how to treat a woman i ended up not wanting to leave, but unfortunately i had too because he was going to work on Monday....

I went back to Friend-Segal Monday morning, Chris had organised a car to drive me..... I didn't even feel like being there that's how much cupid got me..

I opened the door and just walked up to my room passing Reemoh and Peejay in the lounge.

Reemoh was feeding Peejay...

Reemoh: Look whose back, we almost thought of sending out a search party for you! I ignored her petty comment and went to my bedroom.....

I threw myself on the bed, busy checking my phone. No message or missed call from Chris.

That was devastating... I heard a knock at the door.. Me: Come in!

Lady moghana walked in, she was wearing a jumpsuit with flip flops and holding a glass of wine as always... She sat next to me.. Her: So how was it?

I just thought of Chris at that present moment.

Me: It was wonderful, i really enjoyed myself Hey.
She put her arm around my shoulders and squeezed me tight..
Her: I'm soo proud of you, he sent a pretty good amount of cash...
Me: That's good
Her: Ya you'll get your R10 000 today
Me: only R10 000?
Her: Ohhh sweety.. Didn't you get the memo?
I looked at her.
Her: Whatever amount of cash you make, you will always earn 10 000
Me: But Godfather used to give me half of the cash i make..
Her: Do you see Godfather anywhere around? She looked sideways.
Her: Because i don't... I cannot believe this woman..
Her: i am doing a lot from my side, feeding you girls, clothing you I'm practically mothering all of you.. And giving you love in the process.. She stood up..
Her: Now I'm going to have breakfast by the pool... I thought that glass she was holding was her breakfast..
She left while wiggling her big Ass.....
I went to shower and just put on leggings, sneakers and a t-shirt... I put a cap and glasses.....
I went to Kresi's room, she was with Melody...
Me: Tramps!
Kresi: says the biggest tramp who went away for the whole weekend.. I hugged them..
Me: How was your weekend yall?
Kresi: boring, didn't have any clients.
Me: That's sad
Melody: How was your weekend with my rapist?
Me: Who France?
Melody: That's what they call him?
Me: Yeah... Well i didn't spend the weekend with France
Kresi: Who did you spend it with?
I looked around..
Me: the walls have ears leme take yall out for breakfast..
Melody: You paying?
Me: obviously
Melody: Then I'm going....

I went to my room and then took my car and phone, melody and Kresi were already waiting for me in the corridor, and we walked out Richardson was to drive us to town.....

..

We got to town, and went to eat breakfast at Wimpy. Kresi: So details bitch!

Me: Well i met a certain Mr that you guys know.. He is rich, handsome and very successful... They looked at me.

Melody: Are you expecting us to guess?

Me: Well I'll just go ahead and tell yall.. I looked at them..

Me: Ladies mantombazana you are looking at Chris's girlfriend

Kresi: Chris who?

Me: Chris Botha!

They looked at each other and laughed.. Kresi: That's a good one..

I gave them a serious look

Melody: You weren't joking? Me: No..

Kresi: Look i am trying not to call you a liar, but you possibly cannot be dating thee Chris Botha..

My phone rang, and it was Chris... Me: speak of the devil..

I answered and put him on loud speaker.. Me:

Hey..

Him: Hey sweetie pie I've just called to check up on you..

Sorry i wasn't there when you woke up

Me: i understand. It's very demanding being an editor in chief of The runway magazine Him: Its alot that goes down sweetie now i have to go check some designs..

Me: I'm sorry.. Him: I'll survive

Melody and Kresi's jaws were just hanging out.. Me: i miss you

Him: i miss you more..

I heard a voice at the background..

Voice: Sir Michael kors is on the other line... Chris: I'm sorry baby but i have to go

Me: Its okay

Him: I'll call you later

Me: I'll be waiting Him: i love you
Here's that word that killed my mother.. Me: me too
Him: Stay beautiful Me: stay handsome
He chuckled and hung up...
Melody and Kresi started making noise that people started
looking at us.. Me: Calm down girls!
Melody: details please.. Me: Fine I'll tell you..
I told them everything how me and Chris met, shame they were
getting goose bumps etc... Kresi: You are soo blessed Melody:
You truly are sweetheart Me:
Thank you girls..
After eating our breakfast we went back to the house and lady
moghana was waiting for us i wonder what we did.....
Her: Ladies I'm glad you are here because i have an
announcement to make.. Peejay and Remooh were Already
sitting down..
Moghana was already drunk and it was only 12:00 in the
afternoon.. Moghana: You guys know that I was a pornstar
right We nodded..
Her: So i figured out that now it's time to take things to the
next level with you girls.. I wasn't ready for what she was
about to Say
Her: i have spoken with some of my old contacts and I'm
pleased to tell you that starting from tomorrow yall are gonna
have sex tapes.... We looked at her like whaaaat!

PART 9 ANGEL: SAMMY'S HEART

March 25, 2016 [visionarywritings](#)

We were all stunned by what Lady moghana said to us. How i
wish i could just runaway sounds so easy right? But
unfortunately it's not. See this prostitution Business is very
dangerous, once you in it there's no getting out. Look at what
happened to Godfather he was killed, this is a very dangerous
business..... Melody: She cannot do this!
Kresi: She's lady moghana she can do anything..

Reemoh: i don't know why you guys are all acting like this!
We prostitutes this is our job! We looked at her..

Kresi: i didn't sign up for people to look at me while I'm
having sex! Remooh: Calm the fuck down! If you soo against
this then why are you here?

Kresi: i think you need to watch how you talk to me because I will strangle you! Remooh stood up...

Remooh: bring it on sister! Kresi stood up too..

Me: Sit down Kresi she's not worth it..

Peejay: Remooh Is right! If you developing morals now then why are you here? Me: Not all of us wanna sign up to be pornstars

Peejay: yall are just lumps in my throat She stood up and Walked out... Her side kick Remooh followed her..

Kresi: the has to be something that we can do to stop this

Melody: and we cannot just run away moghana will literally hang us.....

I can't even tell Chris that I'm a prostitute, Him seeing my sex tape that's gonna be devastating....

.

..

Haike tomorrow came and we were forced to do the sex tape. Them other girls did it as a group and I had to do it alone.... I didn't even know the guy, he was rough and it was just humiliating..

We did it outdoors next to the pool, took an hour after that i didn't want anything i was broken and shattered inside that i locked myself up in my room all crying...

The thought of him touching me and exploiting me like that really tore deep inside... I went to take a shower, i scrubbed myself until i had red marks.. I just sank down crying asking myself why, why, why me?????

I know us prostitutes we taken as if like we have no emotions, but in actual fact we do and we hurt like other people.....

I must've been in the shower for a very long time, i couldn't take Away the thought that this Nigerian guy i just did the tape with is actually a part of me now because he came inside of me a few times....

I was disgusted, i was Angry, i was beyond humiliated.....

I got out of shower and wrapped the towel around my body and

went to my bed just cuddled myself there and couldn't stop crying....

Kresi and melody knocked and knocked in my room but i didn't come out, i wasn't In the mood for anything or anyone. Even Chris tried calling and sending messages but i was not in the mood to talk to someone.....

..

I stayed in my room for at least 2 days until i decided that this is it, I'm done with Moghana and I'm done with this life!..... I packed up my clothes and went..

Luckily moghana was not around and none of this girls would stop me.. They were in the kitchen preparing food.. Kresi: and then?

Me: I'm leaving Peejay laughed.

Kresi: Oookay let's be calm and rational about this.. Me: I'm done with this life..

Peejay: Whoa get of your high horse! You have a sex tape so what? Kim kardashian has one too!

Me: Well I'm not Kim kardashian! Peejay: You not a saint either!

Melody looked at me with tears in her eyes.. Melody: Please don't go Sammy

Reemoh: Agh just let your highness go, but know that you digging your own grave! If lady moghana finds out hell is gonna break loose! Me: Yea whatever!!

I dragged my bag and Walked out.. I asked Richardson to drive me to town. I wasn't gonna ask him to drive me to Chris' house what if he tells moghana were i am i don't trust him.....

We got to town and i climbed off Me: Thank you Richardson

Him: Are you gonna be alright Madam? Me: I'll be fine thank you..

I put on my glasses and watched him drive off....

I asked around for the direction to Runway Ave. I didn't know if i was gonna find Chris there or what...

I took a private taxi which dropped me straight at the runway Ave...

Its a beautiful place the whole Ave was just fashion. Models were doing photo shoots, clothes were being taken to the headquarters i was just looking around admiring the place....

Me: Wow..

I walked to the headquarters and went inside.

The building was too big and very beautiful. Was state of the art everything.... I walked up to the receptionist.. She was sorting out some papers.

I cleared my throat, she looked at me.. Her: Can i help you?

Me: Yes I'm looking for Mr Chris.. Chris Botha..

She looked at me from head to toe. I was just wearing my addidas track suit with addidas sneakers..

Her: Do you have an appointment? Me: No.. He knows me.. She looked at me again..

Her: mam“ you have to make an appointment it“s standard procedure.. Me: Is he here or not?

Her: Can you please exit the building before i call security..

That was a disappointment... I dragged my bag and started walking out..... When i was out i saw a Mercedes-Benz pulling over, and Chris came out...

He was busy on his phone with his assistant running after him...

I was still standing by the door, i was a bit scared i didn“t know how he was gonna react when he sees me....

He didn“t notice me, he passed me... Me: Chris...

He stopped and turned around, he was shocked to see me..

Him:

Sammy?

I was overwhelmed by different emotions that i started tearing up... He came and hugged me..

Him: I“ve tried calling you.. I was worried what happened? He put his hands on my cheeks wiping my tears...

Me: i.....It“s...

I couldn“t stop crying, he was kissing me and wiping my tears...

Him: Don“t ever do that to me.. I thought something bad happened to you.. Me: I“m sorry..

He looked at Keisha...

Him: Do i have any meetings?

Keisha: No sir but you were supposed to fly to new York later today, you have a meeting with Michael kors in 3 days time....

He looked at me..

Him: would you like to go to new York with me? New York!!!! I have never even been to Cape Town!! Me: new York?

Him: i can“t cancel the meeting it“s very important Me:

Ofcourse I'll go with you..

He smiled and kissed me....

We walked inside the building, the receptionist was just shocked to see me walking with

Chris while holding hands, and he was dragging my luggage bag with his other hand.... We got into the elevator and Walked inside, his assistant took another elevator....

As soon as the door closed he put his hands on my cheeks and kissed me.....

I tried to suppress what happened with this passionate kiss that made my knees weak.... The elevator stopped and we were in his office, at least there was no one in his office.. It was a small beautiful office. Everything was black and white....

Him: Make yourself comfortable while i go through some with we'll leave after an hour... I sat on the couch while he sat at his table. He was on his laptop..

I watched him concentrating shuuuuuu this man of mine is hoot!..... After a while he looked at me and smiled, i blushed and looked down... I don't know why i was acting like such a teen..

PART 10 ANGEL: SAMMY'S HEART

March 25, 2016 [visionarywritings](#)

We flew to New York in his private jet. I have never been in a private jet before I've only seen it on TV...

It was beautiful and looked expensive it had Brown leather couches, a bar, a flat screen and a little toilet it was just too perfect.. We even had a flight attendant.

Chris was working and i was just getting sloshed having some bit of fun before landing.....

After some long time of being in the air we finally landed, i was very tired and very hungover because sleeping on the couches didn't do me any justice.....

We were gonna stay at some 5 star hotel we got a villa.... Well that was the only thing available...

I was very excited, i couldn't believe that I was in new York like Ahhhhhhhhhhh!! I literally felt like screaming.....

We got into our villa, it was very beautiful especially the view.. I was admiring the view when i felt hands hugging me from

behind i don't wanna lie i
jumped a lil". I was very jumpy especially after the sex tape i
feel a bit uncomfortable when a
Nigga touches me... Him:
Are you okay?
I turned around and faked a smile..Me: I'm fine...
He looked at me as if like he didn't believe me...
Me: Can i get some sleep? I'm very tired and very hung over..
He kissed me on my forehead...
Him: You can sleep while i work,and later we'll go out for
dinner...

Me: Okay

He kissed me again on my forehead, then i went to bath first. I sat in the bathtub i had ran myself a bubble bath, i need it especially after all that has been going on.....

I got out after like 40min,i dried myself put on lotion and some ordinary short dress with flowers..

Chris was concentrating on his work, he is a workaholic....I got in bed and slept...

..

I felt someone busy kissing me on my cheek, and neck.. I smiled and opened my eyes it was Chris..

Him: Wake up sleepy head.. Me: Can't i sleep longer?

Him: No.. We have to go.

I was being reluctant i really wanted to sleep..

Him: Come on sweetheart we can't keep my model waiting..

Me: Please have dinner without me.. Him: No

Me: But I'll be bored all you gonna do is talk about Business..

Him: You sure you don't wanna meet my model? She's famous I quickly raised my head up.. Me: Who? Is it Naomi?

Him: No better than that... Me:

Who?

Him: if you come, you will find out..He stood up

Me: This is not fair. You indirectly trying to get me to go to dinner with you... Him:kinda, now get up..

I slowly got up and went to bath again while he showered,and then we went to dress up... I wore a blue skinny Jean that was very tight and ripped, i wore a long white t-shirt that reached my knees and it was sleeveless... I topped off the outfit with white heels....

My make up and hair were also on point i mean I'm meeting a model for heaven's sake so i have to look my best...

Chris looked me from head to toe..Him: wow!

I smiled.. He was also looking good in his all black fancy suit with a black shirt..

Him: i think we can leave now, we already late..... We walked out to the car, i had my hand in his arm..

Our car was already waiting for us, and we went..

..

We got into an Italian restaurant, and a table was reserved for us already. Chris is such a gentleman that he opened the chair for me and i sat down. He sat next to me..

Me: So were is she?

Him: Relax she will be here..

We ordered drinks while waiting for his mystery model... She showed up after an hour, i was already fed up.. Chris: She's here..

I saw some blondie making her way to us, it was only when she took off her glasses that i noticed who it was.. My jaw dropped no like literally dropped. My mouth was literally open....

Her: Hey Chris sorry I'm late.. Chris stood up and hugged her....

It was KHLOE KARDASHIAN!!!!!!!!!!!!!!

She came and hugged me too, i was literally Shaking... She then sat down opposite us..

Me: i cannot believe it! Khloe kardashian??! She smiled at me..

Chris: This is my lady Sammy, and Sammy you know khloe..

Me: Ofcause i do know her, i am obsessed with you and your sisters i never miss an episode of keeping up with the kardashians...

Her: Then you must make an appearance on our next episode..

Me: definitely!

I seriously couldn't believe that khloe was opposite me....

Khloe: i don't know why I'm here because I'm not even a model...

Chris: Don't give me that, you know i want you to be on the cover of my magazine for the next issue which should come out in 2 weeks time..

Her: 2 weeks time? That's short notice what if i have plans?

Chris: cancel them..

The waitress came to take our order.. Khloe: i don't know
Chris

Chris: Come on you can't drop me now..

Her: just because we once had a fling doesn't mean that i

should do you any special favours..Me: Wait.. So yall actually hooked up?

Khloe: Yes but it was a long time ago.. Our fling didn't even last for a month.

I felt special, i am dating Khloe's ex.. Our food came..

Chris: So you gonna do it right?Her: I'll have to think about it

Chris: There's no time to think, deadline is in 2 weeks time..

Her: Why me?

Him: i was going through my old issues and i realised that i never had a kardashian in the cover of my magazine. Plus you will make me alot of money.. Khloe: Ohh so you just using me for money?

They both laughed... I wasn't even concentrating on what was going on, I was starring at how perfect she was...

Khloe: You know what, i will send you an email tomorrow regarding this issue because right now i have to go somewhere..

She stood and hugged us again and left... I punched Chris on his shoulder.. Him: Ouch! What you do that for?

Me: That was khloe kardashian! He chuckled..

Me: i still cannot believe this! He looked at me..

Me: What?

Him: Its good to see you all lighting up again. Yesterday you were a bit down even this morning

I looked down..he lifted my chin up to look at him.. Him: What's eating you?

I wanna tell him, Ohh God i wanna tell him every but I'm just so scared what if he doesn't understand. What if he doesn't want nothing to do with me.. Him: Talk to me..

Me: Well i... I have something to tell you.. My eyes were already full of tears..

He wiped his mouth with the napkin and looked at me... Me: Chris i...

PART 11 ANGEL: SAMMY'S HEART

March 26, 2016 [visionarywritings](#)

This was harder than I anticipated. Me: What im trying to say Is that i...

His phone interrupted us by ringing. He picked it up and looked at it..

Him: Sorry sweetie it's the office i have to take this this... He stop and Walked away..

What the hell was i thinking trying to tell Chris about this!
Which guy in their right mind would accept that their gf is a
prostitute? I think his phone saved me.. I wiped my tears.... He
came back after like 5min..

Him: Now I'm all yours, let's talk.. Me: Uhm..

He was looking at me..

Me: Its just that were i was living there was a huge fight which ended up with me being evicted..

He looked at me, i hope he buys the story.. Him:

What happened?

Me: We.. It's just alot of girls living there so you know were there's girls there's fights.. He still looked at me.....

Him: Okay let's finish our food and go, I have alot to do when we get to the hotel..... We ate our dinner and then drove back to the hotel....

As soon as we walked in, he went straight to the bedroom and took his laptop.. He also took

off his jacket and tie then changed his shoes and wore

sleepers... He also took some papers and went to sit at the

kitchen counter... I stood at the door starring at him..

He must've noticed that i was looking at him because he closed his laptop and exhaled..

Him: Why don't you watch the kardashians while i work.. Me:

Its 22:00

Him: by 00:00 I'll be done.. He went back to working....

I went to the lounge and watched Tv. The lounge and kitchen were like combined, no wall in

the middle separating the two....

I noticed that he found it hard concentrating because of the noise that the TV was making... Him: Sweety

I looked at him..

Him: just give me an hour tops please.. Me: But I'm bored..

Him: Please i need to finish this sketches by tonight

Me: Fine I'll just go to bed...

Him: You can play games in my ipad until i finish.. Me: Okay..

I walked to the bedroom and his ipad was on the bed. I took it and went through it but there was nothing interesting In there was just work notes and a few games..

I played most of his games until i fell asleep....

..

I woke up in the morning, i had a good night sleep.. I looked over and Chris was sleeping next to me.
I kissed him and got out of bed..

I went to the bathroom and brushed my teeth then i went to the kitchen to make myself some coffee...

I noticed his laptop and the sketches laying there....

I poured myself coffee and went to check them. I was surprised that the only thing he drew was my face all the sketches was just my face..

So Chris worked the whole night just to draw my face? This guy can really surprised me...

I went and sat on the couch watching Tv while waiting for him to wake up..

He woke up after like an hour, he was all yawning and making his way to the kitchen... He came back after a few minutes with a cup of coffee and sat next to me. He kissed me on my cheek

Him: Morning Me: Hey..

Him: How did you sleep? Me: i slept fine thank you... Him: I'm glad

He took a sip of his coffee..

Him: What time is it? Me: Around 10am

Him: Then we need to go bath and prepare ourselves Me: Prepare for what?

Him: Michael kors i have a meeting with him in an hour or so I stood up..

Him: i thought you were gonna complain

Me: You meet interesting people so i cannot complain..

We went bath and prepared ourselves to go and meet Michael kors....

..

Michael kors came to our hotel and we went to have breakfast downstairs, unlike khloe he was there early and already waiting for us.. We sat down.

Chris: Sorry I'm late

Michael: Don't worry it's been 5min since I've arrived..

Chris: Michael meet my woman Sammy, and sweetie this is Michael.. Me: Hi..

Him: How are you?

Me: I'm good thanks you..

He picked up some gift bag from the floor and gave it to me...

Him: a little gift for you

Me: Ohh uhm Thank you.. Him: Come on open it..

It was a beautiful watch..

Me: Wow uhm Thank you..Michael: You welcome

Chris: How did you know that i was going to bring a woman

Michael: Are you serious?

Chris chuckled.

Michael: So whose gonna be in the cover of your next magazine?Chris: Khloe kardashian

Michael: a kardashian Chris: problem?

Michael: Not really I'm just tired of everywhere i go and i hear about the kardashians. Kardashians this and kardashians that..

Chris: So who do you suggest?Michael looked at me..

Michael: How about your gf?Me: Uhm me?

Michael: Yes why not? You young i watched you from since you were walking in and you have the body of a model. You innocent you not a kardashian.. Do you see what im talking about Chris?

Chris looked at me...

Chris: Now that you've mentioned it I think I can use Sammy.. I couldn't believe what i was hearing.

PART 12 ANGEL: SAMMY'S HEART

March 26, 2016 [visionarywritings](#)

We went back to the flat after the breakfast we had with Michael kors. I was still trying to process what they asked me... Him: You have been awfully quiet..

I threw myself on the couch..

Him: Is it because of what we asked you?

Me: i don't know Chris i mean i have no experience in modelling

Him: You not gonna model sweetheart you just gonna pose and the photographer will take pictures. To make it less awkward I'll be there.. Me: What about Khloe?

Him: She sent me an email that she won't be able to do it anymore apparently her and her sisters will be in Miami by then.. Me: But still..

Him: Why is it an issue for you? I thought you would jump for the opportunity plus I'll pay you...

It would be so easy if u wasn't a prostitute.

Me: Fine I'll do it. He smiled.

Him: Thank you..

I don't know if i have made the right decision but then when opportunity knocks at your door, you have to open. And this might be a good start for me..

.
..

I truly enjoyed my time in New York, i didn't wanna go back to South Africa but then Chris has responsibilities...

One Saturday afternoon i decided to meet up with my girls Melody and Kresi, i wanted to run this through them and see what they would say... We were having lunch at McDonalds.

Kresi: New York really cleansed you bona Umuhle njani (look how beautiful you are) I smiled

Me: Thank you girls..

Melody: You look like there's something on your mind Me: in fact the is..

They looked at me..

Me: Chris asked me to be in the cover of the runway magazine.. They both screamed at the same time Me: Calm down bitches! Melody: Ohh my God i hope you said yes!

Me: Ofcause i did..

I said that while looking down.. Kresi:

But?

Me: i don't know yall and u haven't even told him about me being a prostitute Melody: You haven't told him?

Me: He is Chris! He dated khloe kardashian! His besties with Michael kors and I've met them.

Kresi: What??! I am soo jealous right now.. I know hey...

Kresi: But then it's not easy to just blur it to someone that you a prostitute Melody: He dated khloe what could be worse than that?

We laughed.. Somebody walked in as we were laughing it was Lady Ndloe i felt somehow especially because she spotted us and headed right to our direction...

Me: I'm leaving yall

Kresi: Sit down and calm down.. Ndloe: Good afternoon ladies

Kresi and melody greeted her... She looked at me..

Her: it would've been nice if you could have said goodbye I kept quiet...

Her: Enjoy your lunch ladies..

She left us like that and went...

I didn't care about that life anymore, I was starting afresh and looking very forward to it..

.
..

The day of the photoshoot came, alot of work was done one me. Michael kors flew from America to check it out. At first i was all nervous but Chris being there made me less nervous... We were showing off Chris's new lingerie so i had to wear a bra and a Bumshort with heels. I really enjoyed the photoshoot.... After a few hours we were done, they gave me a gown... We went to check the photos and they were beautiful..

Michael: She's a natural, now this is gonna sell

I was all smiling with Chris squeezing me tight.....

Haike days passed everything was being put together for the next issue, the magazine was sent off to the printers, Chris and myself we were in our Penthouse enjoying a nice cossy meal..

Chris: i can't wait to see you in that cover of my magazine..

Me: i still cannot believe that I'm gonna be in your magazine

He took celery and put it in his mouth..

Him: You must consider being a model Me: i should

Him: leme go and get some more gravy for the lamb Me: Okay

He kissed me on my forehead as he was passing.. Surprisingly the door bell rang.. Me: Expecting anyone?

Him: No I'm not

Me: I'll go and check..

I stood up and went to answer the door, i couldn't believe who it was.. It was Remooh and Peejay they had a champagne with them..

Peejay: Hey bitch!

Me: What are yall doing here? They invited themselves in..

Chris was standing at the table with the bowl of gravy..

Peejay: Omg so it is true! She's dating Chris! They went up to him all greeting him.. Chris was just confused..

Remooh: aren't you gonna intro us Sammy? Me: uhm no what are yall doing here? Peejay:

We here to congratulate you Ofcause Me:

Congratulate me?

Peejay: the sex tape Ofcause, it went viral! Ohhh Lord..

Reemoh: Why you acting surprised it was gonna go viral! Chris looked at me all puzzled Him: sex tape?

Peejay: Yeah it's on xxvideos. com.. Why yall acting surprised as if like we didn't know that Angel is a prostitute!

Remooh: Were are the glasses?

Chris: Angel??? Sammy what's going on?

Peejay took out her phone and showed Chris the sex tape.. His face changed immediately he looked at me with eyes full of rage.. My eyes were filled with tears Him: Are you a prostitute? I nodded my head no..

Him: Don't please don't piss me off more than you already have! Me: i.. I.. Can explain

Him: Are you a prostitute?

I couldn't admit it, i just nodded my head yes..

He looked at me for a long time, i didn't know if he wanted to kill me or he has already killed me in his head...

He took his phone, dialled some numbers and put it on his ear..

Him: Its Chris.. We have to stop the magazine.... No don't tell me it's too late... Just call the whole team and meet me at the office we need to do damage control.... He took his car keys and Walked out, banging the door behind him..

The was silence for a while.. Peejay:

Wow!

Remooh: i guess we won't be having champagne

Me: Can you guys please leave, what yall came here for has been accomplished so please leave..

They didn't say anything they just stood up and Walked out...

I sat on the couch crying, i can't lose Chris i love him too much to loose him.

PART 13 ANGEL SAMMY'S HEART

March 26, 2016 [visionarywritings](http://visionarywritings.com)

I waited and waited for Chris but he never showed up that i even went to bed.....I couldn't sleep the previous night,my heart was heavy, very heavy....

Anyway I woke up early the following morning and I was pacing up and down in the kitchen floor hoping that Chris will show up, and he did... He looked tired and drained, i doubt he got any sleep...

He threw his phone and car keys on the kitchen counter..

I really didn't know what to say i could still see the rage in his eyes..Him: Why didn't you tell me?

His voice was calm..

Me: i was scared that you probably gonna dump me.. The last thing i wanted to do Chris was to hurt you.

Him: But you did.. I lost millions because of you. I had to stop the magazine from being printed and all that, but i still had to pay everyone who was working on it and unfortunately i didn't make any profit..

Me: I'm truly sorry Chris i wish there was something I could do to fix this..Him: Actually there is..

I looked at him.

Him: i want you to leave, i never wanna see you ever again!

Me: Chris please..

Him: there is no way that we gonna have a healthy relationship without trust. And your lifestyle and my lifestyle crashes, imagine what the media would say if they could get a scoop of this story. I'm done! It's over for me..

All i could do at that is just cry and say I'm sorry..

Him: Now please pack your things and Leave my house... Me: Chris no please we can fix this (crying)

Him: You a fucken prostitute! There is nothing to fix now leave! (shouting) This was the first time that he has ever raised his voice on me..

I was reluctant to leave, that he literally dragged me out of the house and threw me out, with my bag along..

Him: i never wanna see you again! You disgust me!

He spat on me. I couldn't believe he was doing this to me. He slammed the door at me... I actually hurt my knee when i fell, i got up and took my bag then slowly went to the elevator.....

I sank down and cried, my heart was shattered, it was shattered into small pieces that you actually cannot put it back together. I love Chris and losing him it's like losing my life.... I started walking around till I came across some benches in some Park and i sat down. I needed a plan, I didn't wanna go back to Moghana's house. I sat there thinking deeply until i remembered that I have 500 000 i can use that to support myself....

I went to the nearest bank to withdraw at least 20 000 for now..

I was sitting down waiting for the teller to finish confirming my information in the computer. All i could hear was the sound that her fingers made as she tapping on that computer keyboard....

People probably thought that I was crazy i looked like a wreck.. She looked at me.

Her: The account was not originally on your name? Me: No it was on my Godfather`s name..

She shook her head. Eish i didn`t wanna be more disappointed today...

Her: I`m sorry the is no money in that account... Me: What do you mean?

Her: it was a joint account, his wife withdrew all the money from that account a few months ago..

I cannot believe this, I thought Godfather put the account in my name... Her:I`m truly sorry..

I flashed a fake smile.. Me:

Its okay.

I stood up and dragged my luggage with tears in my eyes.. I truly don`t know how to explain the pain...

I had nowhere else to go but Moghana`s house, ya neh it`s funny how life can change in a blink of an eye...

I called Kresi to tell Richardson to come and fetch Me, and she didn`t waste time. In an hours time i was back at moghana`s house.....

Moghana was sitting with the girls in the lounge, she stood up and came to hug me... Her: Ohww Angel I`m sorry

I tried to stop myself from crying in front of this bitches!

Her: We can go to your room and talk..

She dragged my bag for me and we went to my room to talk..

She held both my hands as we sat on my bed..

Her: The girls told me about what happened.. I`m truly sorry my dear She brushed my hair with her hand..

I couldn`t stop the tears from falling... Her: i want you to stop this nonsense of love.. I looked at her..

Her: You a prostitute Angel you belong here with me. I`m not

trying to discourage you but people like us are not loved. I mean there is no guy that can love you if they know who you truly were forget about love, love is the reason why I drink myself to a coma everyday.... Moghana is right, i mean what did i expect? I saw my mom crying everyday because of this thing called "love" and here i am repeating the same mistakes... Her: Sit here I'm coming..

She went out and came back after a few minutes... She gave me a stack of cash..Her: Its R2000 go spoil yourself a little.

Me:

Thank you..

I took it. She gave me a hug and started walking away with that big Ass of hers.....Her: Angel

I looked at her

Her: Remember I`m the only person that`s gonna love you..I smiled..

..

Weeks passed vele Chris didn`t want anything to do with me, he even replaced me with some model bitch!..

It was a Saturday afternoon and I was sitting in the lounge reading the magazine an article of him and his "Fiancé". He was talking about me and how i almost ruined his career! They were planning their wedding they were set off to get married in 6 months time... I threw the magazine away... Kresi: What`s eating you?

Me: Chris is engaged!

Kresi: Its been 3 weeks since yall broke up Ofcause he was gonna move on what did you expect?

I looked at her...

Her: Look Angel just move on, clearly this guy has moved on. He probably doesn`t even remember your name by now..

Kresi was right, I`ve been moaning the death of my relationship for 3 weeks now, it`s time i move on..

Me: You right.. Fuck Chris it`s time i move on! Kresi: That`s the spirit..

Lady moghana walked in on us...

Her: how see you ladies holding up? Especially you Angel

Me: Fuck Chris! I`m claiming back my life! She smiled.

Her: That`s the spirit, now we have our Angel back.. I mean did you read the filth he said about you?

Me: i did.. You know I`m soo over Chris i feel like doing another sex tape.. I`m over men! She clapped her hands..

Her: Why don`t you girls go out for tonight before we start

working next week..Me: That's a good idea..

..

Later that day we all prepared ourselves to go out clubbing..but Moghana directed us to some sophisticated lounge were we gonna meet dudes with loaded wallets..

Before we left she had a little meeting with us in the lounge...

Her: Girls i want you to make me proud tonight. Go to that lounge there's men who are desperate for a hook up.. This men are loaded have fun, flirt, fuck but don't date. I don't want any broken hearts I've dealt enough with Angel mobbing around the whole 3 weeks....

She gave us money and we all went to the condor. Richardson was to drive us as always.....Peejay and Remooh was amongst us..

Peejay: Angel sorry about Chris

Me: Its fine.. How did you guys even find me?

Reemoh: moghana actually hired a PI to track you down and have us break you and Chris up! That was heartbreaking to hear, but I feel she saved me Chris is a jerk! Me:

Chris is a jerk!

Melody: At least he didn't put your pic in that article Me: Yeah whatever..

.
.

We got to the lounge, it wasn't full I'm guessing not everyone can afford to be here.. The was a few rich guys, Peejay and Remooh went to mingle with them while Melody and Kresi went to dance.. I was sitting at our table just drinking my red square and moving my head sideways in rhythm to the song....

Haike after a few minutes the was a bit of silence, the music stopped nje i looked around to see what was going on and my my i saw 3 unusual niggas walking in... All my life i have never seen such hotness...

Everyone stopped what they were doing to look at them, being girls the most.. One looked colored or white he was wearing a black denim Jean, with those long T-shirts that niggas wear it was black and had a lion's face at the front. The t-shirt reached his knees it was sleeveless revealing tattoos on his shoulders.

He was wearing black airforce sneakers that had

Gold spikes.. He topped the outfit with a red snap back cap wearing it backwards... His walk Ohh my Lord save me, he

had brackets. He was all smiling and talking with his friends i noticed that he had gold grills in his lower teeth like AKA..

The other nigga was wearing all grey his clothes were written "Fresh Boyz" i couldn't see him that clear because he had a hat that cover him up to his eyes and had dreadlocks... The other nigga was wearing a black muscle vest, with a black and grey shirt. He was wearing a black denim Jean with timbalands and a white Beanie hats...

They were escorted to a vip table yaa neh i could tell that they were balling.. Waitresses who were half naked started bringing champagne to their table, I'm talking about expensive champagne....

They sat down, the other raised up his hand to the Dj and suddenly i heard a song playing.. "Richer than the richest, more money bitches"

Uhm okay we were all glued to them, they caught our attention i was holding my red square with my mouth half opened looking at them like okay who are this Niggas? Are they important? Am i supposed to know them?

PART 14 ANGEL: SAMMY'S HEART

March 26, 2016 [visionarywritings](#)

Haike ke shame baze bayenza indaba... We were all watching them flashing, rapping along to their songs while sipping on expensive champagne...

Bona shame bahle jealous down (they are hot) you can't hate them even if you wanted. They were being served by waitresses who were wearing bras and Bumshorts.... I took a good look at them.. Melody joined me after a while..

Melody: and then who are they? Me: search me..

I took out my phone and started chatting...

Melody: Maybe i should get us some drinks so we can watch the show that they putting on while sipping on something.. I laughed..

Me: Do that...

She stood up and went, i continued being on my phone for a until melody came back.. She was empty handed Me: And then?

Her: Its full at the bar, i ended up getting tired of standing.. Me: Its okay were are the rest of the girls?

Melody: Just around trying to get rich man.. Me: Okay..

Melody and i continued chilling, we were on our phones.. until melody started tapping me a little.. I looked at her she signalled with her head that i should look on my left.. I looked on my left and saw the niggas coming down the stairs. Their table was up there away from us bosamsokolo....

They were now a bit closer to us but it was only the two of them.. Its the one with a Beanie hat and the one that looks like a colored..

Our table was just right there in their way, they had to pass our table if they wanted to exit or go to the bar, or even go to the bathroom..

They whispered something to each other then looked at us..Me: Please don't come here.. Please don't come here..

It was almost as if like i was calling them to come because they made their way to us..

Melody got nervous..

Melody: They coming.. They coming... Oh my God what we gonna do?Me: Act normal *Whispering*

They stopped right at our table and looked at us. I won't lie my heart started beating Hella fast this niggas were just Hella fine!!!

The one with a Beanie hat was holding a can of Heineken, the other one wasn't holding anything..

That phrase "Act normal" just went out of the window their presence was just intimidating.. I was Shaking while holding my phone that I put it away...

I looked at melody she was ready to die, that she started breathing abnormally..

She held my hand tight while she put her other hand on her chest... Me: Melody are you okay?

She shook her head no... She was even crying.. Me: What's wrong?

Her: i can't brea..i..Sammy help..

The coloured Nigga started talking and i noticed that he also had dimples..

Him: Should we fucken call an Ambulance? The other nigga replied..

Him: Na it's just a panic attack

He went and crouched next to melody and held her hand Yooh melody got worse.. Him: Just breath skat..

The coloured Nigga ran his mouth again.. Him: Naa G, this bitch looks like she's dying..

Friend: Relax G, Khanyo has this shit remember?

The coloured guy raised his hands a little in form of "i surrender".. Me: Melody are you okay?

She was holding on to me so tight i thought she was gonna break my arm.. The Friend started talking..

Him: Let's go outside..

Melody shook her head and held on to me...

Friend: Eyy angeke ngikudle wena(i won't eat you) your beautiful chocolate thing!..Eish Ya maan there's something about this guy shame..

Melody looked at me, i nodded my head yes... Me: Scream if he tries something!

The nigga laughed..

Him: Scream, really??

Me: i don't trust you and i won't just let you take my friend...

He looked at melody..

Him: Manje ubani lo mfakazi (whose this spokesperson)

Melody looked ready to die..

Him: Asambe (let's go)

Melody stood up she looked weak, like she was gonna collapse
The coloured Nigga ran his mouth..

Him: Gesh carry her G, she looks like she's gonna fall.. Gesh:
Naa uzoba grand

He just held her hand and they started walking away.. Me:
Bring my friend back..

Him: if i don't uzoyenzani? (if i don't what are you gonna do)
His friend talked Him: Gesh..

Gesh: Naa Carl i wanna know what she's gonna do, this bitch
has been all about attitude! I stood up..

Me: You..

Him: Yooh hlala phantsi tuu! (sit down) I sat down and they
walked out..

Carl or whoever he was started laughing.. Me: It wasn't funny
at all..

Him: Who said I'm laughing at what he said? I looked at him..

Him: Yabo yaphapha! (you are forward)

Okay his colored but speaking Zulu and has attitude there is
nothing to live for anymore... I folded my arms and crossed my
legs i was boiling inside...

He looked at me, said nothing just looked at me...

I looked away couldn't look at him he was just too perfect...

As if like things couldn't get more tense his Friend the one
wearing grey clothes came to us, now i was feeling the heat..

Carl: i was wondering were you disappeared too.. Him:

Had to make a few calls..

There was silence i figured they were looking at me, i didn't
dare to look at them.... It was getting too much i stood up and
started walking out not realising that Carl was following me..

When we were outside he roughly grabbed Me by my arm and
pushed me against the wall..

Me: Ouch! Are you insane?

I tried to walk away but he put his hands around my waist and
pinned Me against the wall.. He came very close to me.. Good
he was smelling good, he was hot, he was making me sweat and
nervous my heart was just beating like it's gonna break...

Him: Calm down would you? I composed myself..

Me: Let me go..

He ignored me.. He parted my legs with his knee.. I was wearing a dress. I'm short and he was tall, i felt his knee against my vagina what is this guy doing Mara? He brought his face closer to mine while running his hands under my t-shirt.. All i could hear was just us breathing and my heart beating....

He just ran his tongue around my lips, i was on another planet i don't know what happened but i kissed him... His lips were soo damn soft and i could smell the whiskey from his mouth which was a huge turn on..

We continued kissing and he was squeezing me very tight on my waist that I gasped.. It was a bit painful but pleasurable at the same time... I put my hands around his neck knocking his cap along the way..

Sammy what the fuck are you doing???

PART 15 ANGEL SAMMY'S HEART

March 26, 2016 [visionarywritings](#)

We continued kissing and just fooling around this nigga right here, this nigga right here was touching me in all the right places....

I felt his phone vibrating in his pocket, it freaked me out a little...

It continued vibrating and he was ignoring it, with his hands under my t-shirt and squeezing the life out of my big boobs...

Me: i.. I don't think.. I don't think it's gonna stop....

He took it out while still kissing me. He then stopped and looked at the caller ID, i saw his eyes widening a lil' Him: Fuck!

He answered, while wiping his lips.

Him: Hello..... Calm down i can't hear you..... Jean did what??.... Stop crying i can.... What??.... What happened???

I saw his face changing...

Him: i thought the new treatment was working..... Which hospital?... Okay fine I'm coming..... I'm on my way just stop crying please.... Okay fine i love you too..... He hung up, didn't even look at me he just started walking away... I looked at him like "Ooookay"..

I walked back to the lounge, it was time for me and the girls to get out of here...

·
·
MELODY

Me and this Gesh were outside in the parking lot. My Panic attack was seizing but i still had this hotness feeling in my chest, and my heart was still beating a bit fast..

He asked me to hold his Heineken can and i did... This guy doesn't even realise that his the reason why I'm soo nervous and having this panic attack... He took out his phone and dialled some number then put it on loud speaker... A female voice spoke..

Her: Ufunani Gesh (what do you want)

Him: Aii wena yini manje (what's wrong) Her: Ufunani? (what do you want)

Him: awuyeke izinto ezisnax (stop being like that) She kept quiet..

Him: i called you to ask you something.. She still kept quiet..

Him: Nokhanya

Her: awukhulume (Talk)

Him: Entlek ukwateleni (Why are you angry) Her: I'm just tired of you Gesh

She was now crying..

Him: Ngenzeni? (what did i do) Her: Don't act like you don't know!

Gesh: maybe this is not the best time to talk to you..

Her: Whatever!

She hunged up.. He exhaled, i could see that he was irritated..

He then looked at me, i couldn't look him straight in the eye, i looked down...

Him: I guess we'll have to figure this out on our own...

Asambe (let's go)

We got into his BMW M3 and he started driving.. I didn't know were we were going, what if this guy kills me Mara? Or rape me? Hai we don't know.....

He took his phone and called someone, i think it was the same girl he called...

She answered but exhaled first before talking... Her:

Gesh..

Him: mina nawe sixabaniswe yini kanti? (what made us fight)

She was all crying..

Him: Yini kanti Ma ka Lwazi?(what's wrong)

Her: You broke my heart Gesh, yesterday I was approached by one of your bitches, if Anathi

wasn't there only God knows what would've happened.. Gesh:

What bitches? Her: Don't act like you don't know..

Him: But i don't know vele khikhi..

Her: You need to figure out what's important to you, them bitches or mina no Lwazi... Gesh: Khanyo..

She hunged up...

He exhaled too... I was sitting there thinking to myself what's happening right now.. Does this guy have a wife and kids??!

.

.

SAMMY

I got all the girls in the car, with the help of Richardson. They were drunk as hell, i looked at them counting them and Melody was missing... Me: Where is Melody yall..

Kresi: Bekanawe (she was with you)

Richardson: I'll go and look for her in the lounge..

I took out my phone and called her, but her phone was off..

I got a bit scared.. I mean the last time i saw her she was with Gesh, what if that guy kidnapped her! Phela prostitutes are always in danger..

Peejay: Haibo Asambeni (let's go)

Me: We can't leave you guys melody is missing..

Remooh: a prostitute cannot go missing.. She probably had a hook up areyeng tuu(let's go) Peejay: Awu cha asihambeni vele (let's go)

Richardson came back and said he could find her....

We drove back to the house with me busy trying to call her but dololo(nothing).....

We got to the house and we went to our bedrooms, i was surprised to find moghana sitting on my bed with some man. They were doing anything just talking..

I looked at them...

Her: Ohh Angel you have a client. This charming man was waiting for you and i kept him company..

I looked at him, he looked soo familiar...

Her: I'll give you guys some space.. She walked out.. I looked at him..

Him: You are so beautiful, I've always wanted to meet you..

Me: How do you know about me?

Him: one of my friends told me about you, you once slept with him Alfred his a truck driver? He told me that you are his regular..

Ohhh i know Alfred, he always comes here when his around the neighbourhood... I looked at this guy he looked very familiar..

He came and knelt before me, then took my hand and kissed

it... He was wearing a bracelet that also looked familiar.. I held it..

Me: Your bracelet looks familiar, where did you get it... He stood up..

Him: Ohh my girl friend gave it to me long time ago while we were dating... Me: Your girlfriend?

Him: Mimi sibiya.. That's a topic i don't wanna touch on..

Shoooooot! This is my father, he doesn't even recognise me??

Him: So how do we do this?

I was looking at him.. Him: Angel???

I came back to reality..

Me: uhm... We.. I.. It depends on you

Him: It doesn't matter how we do it, i just wanna get the taste of Angel..

He held my hand and Walked me into the bed, reality kicked in i am going to have sex with my father..

I know what yall are thinking but what im doing here is pay back for everything that he did to me and my mother! I'm a prostitute for fuck's sake!

.

Yes I did sleep with him, he had his way with me. I was just laying there looking up with tears falling while he was ontop of me enjoying himself all moaning and what not..

We didn't even use a condom, yes that's how much i wanted to break him...

When he was done he laid ontop of me catching his breath...

He kissed me..

Him: Thank you

I faked a smile, he got off and started dressing up... I got up and went to wrap myself with a towel..

I stood by the bathroom door.. Him: i hope we can do this again Me: i hope so too dad...

He looked at me puzzled..

Me: Don't you even notice me? Can't you see my mother in me? He looked at me for a long time, then i saw him get shocked..

Him: Sammy?? I looked at him..

He sat down with hands in his head.. Him: Ohw Lord what have i done?

He was Shaking with tears in his eyes, busy rocking back and forth in my bed..

Me: That's what you get!! This life I'm living is because of you! You killed my mother with a heart attack..

I was now crying too...

Him: Had you been a good father to Me, we wouldn't be in

this situation! He looked at me...

Him: You soo evil!

Me: Says a man who just slept with his daughter..

He stood up and came to me, then put his hand around my neck
i started screaming..

He pushed me back against the wall and started strangling me... His hand was tight around my neck..

Him: I'm gonna kill you!!!

He reached down in his pocket, and took out his pocket knife then stabbed me, literally stabbed me with no hesitation.....

The door flung open, Moghana came In with some two niggas..

Her: Oh my God Angel..

The two men held him back as i fell.. Moghana: Kill him!! Kill this dog!! Dad: You will burn in hell Sammy!!

Those were the last words i heard before the lights went off..

PART 16 ANGEL: SAMMY'S HEART

March 29, 2016 [visionarywritings](#)

I wish I knew what happened after i blacked out but unfortunately I don't know.... All i know is that i woke up with an excruciating pain in my left breast, and i realised that i was in hospital....

I was a bit dizzy, no i was Hella dizzy the room looked like it was spinning i tried to compose myself but I couldn't...

I slowly lifted my body up, with the help of my hands balancing on the bed so i could sit up straight...

When i did sit in a semi-upright posting i felt more dizzy....

I put my hand in my left breast where the pain was arising from and i felt stitches... He actually stabbed me on my breast....

The nurse walked in..

Her: How are you feeling?

I cleared my throat which felt a bit dry.. Her:

Should i get you some water? I nodded...

She went to get me some water, and i drank.... Me: I'm very dizzy

Her: i think that's because you lost alot of blood.. I looked at her..

Her: You were unconscious when you were brought in, and your t-shirt was very bloody... That explains it all...

Her: try to get some rest, I'll bring you something to eat when

you wake up so you can regain some strength... Me: Thank you..

She helped me to lie back and i slept...

..

The next coming days were devastating at the hospital, i constantly felt depressed, this thing of sleeping with my father truly got to me...

I thought i could handle it but i couldn't, i was shattered, i was depressed i was just everything you could think off...

I was even losing weight because of not eating, all i could do was just lie on my bed and cry everyday i even refused to have visitors allowed to come and see me....

The Doctor kept me at the hospital for a while, he suspected that if I get discharged with this state of my depression i could commit suicide, he even got me a psychologist.... I was in the best hospital alright, Moghana made sure that i get the best medical/health care....

I wasn't open with the psychologist i mean it's not easy to just tell someone that you have slept with your father and that you are a prostitute.....

.

I woke up one morning, went to bath and just stared out of the window... It was raining i watched the rain falling down so smoothly thinking to myself that this rain represents all the tears I've cried since I've been here...

I heard someone clearing their throat i turned around to check who it was and it was the psychologist, i continued looking out of the window...

She came closer. She wasn't your typical Psychologist, she was "Miss know it all" or she

thought she knew it all.. See that's the problem about psychologists they think they know it all, they think they know how you feel, they think they understand your pain and emotions but in actual fact this bitches are just playing it cool to make you think that they feeling your pain while they ain't....

My psychologist was worse, she looked like she was born with a silver spoon in her mouth,

she didn't suffer not even a bit, i could tell she had a very good upbringing... Her: I also like the rain, do you like the rain?

Me: (Silence)..

Her: Sammy you will have to talk to me if you wanna get out of here.. Me: (Silence)..

Her: Its fine, I'll just sit here until you ready to talk...

She does this everyday.. She comes sit down and silence eludes the room then after an hour she leaves..

She crossed her legs as she sat down on that chair busy trying to pull her short skirt down. I looked at her thinking to myself that, she wore it knowing it's short then why pull it down?..

She was also wearing heels the kinda ones that I cannot walk on because of how high the heel was...

I didn't say nothing i just continued starring at the rain...

.
.

MELODY

We were all worried about Sammy, well not all of us. Remooh and Peejay were not worried at all...

We were sitting in the lounge just thinking about everything..

I was on WhatsApp with Gesh.. I know i didn't really tell on what happened that night, but nothing much happened we just drove around and he drove me back to Friend-Segal.. We were starting to be quite close, he would call me etc, he also would tell me how much he wants to see me again but I'll always come up with excuses...

I'm a prostitute we will never work, and im very scared of him if he found out that I'm a prostitute, he probably would have me hanged..

*****WhatsApp*****

Him: When am i seeing you again? Me: I'm not sure but I'll let you know..

Him: You always not sure, it's like you don't wanna see me at all Me: Its not like that...

He didn't reply.. Then after he called me. I looked at everyone..

Me: Excuse me..

I walked up to the kitchen to answer my phone.. I was soo scared of him that my heart would pump fast while speaking to him on the phone..

Me: Hi..

I was busy breathing in and out, silently..

Him: sithini istory sakho kanti wena (what's your story) Me: uhm.. I..

Maybe If i tell him that I have a bf he will back off..

Me: Its just that my bf is not happy about our relationship..

Him: Eyy i don't give a fuck about your boyfriend!

Ehhhhh..

Me: Gesh please don't ever call me! Him: Melody..

I hunged up, luckily i didn't sleep with him. I have dodged that

Bullet..

.

SAMMY

The bitch finally left, now i could have a some peace! I was now thinking about Chris. He was my refuge and my pillar of strength. He was my comforter and now i needed him, i felt like picking up my phone and calling him...

I hesitated at first but ended up getting my phone and calling him..

Unfortunately i got "The number you have dialled does not exist" my heart was broken, Chris has totally deleted me from his life.. I needed fresh air, i needed the rain to cleanse my soul and heal my broken heart....

I walked out of my ward and to the reception.. I wanted to exit and just go outside.. Some woman accidentally bumped into me and my phone fell.. She didn't even say sorry... I exhaled and closed my eyes as i tried to pick up my phone, the pain in my breast just didn't allow.. I tried every angle and as i was crouching to pick it up, someone beat me up to it they picked it up before me. I looked up to see who it was, and it was Carl with his hotness standing right in front of me....

What is he doing here? He extended his hand to help me get up, i didn't restrain he helped me get up....

Him: We must stop meeting each other in weird places. First the lounge now the hospital.. Before i could answer, some little girl called him.. She was wearing a pink barbie night dress with pink sleepers and a pink gown... She was pushing her IV(drip)...

She looked underweight, and her hair was just a few strands in other places she was bald and in other places she had hair..

Her: Carl..

She was even holding a purple dinosaur Teddy bear, she looked 6years old.. Carl: I'm coming my Angel..

Her: Now before i die, the doctor said i don't have much time to live, i wanna die with you and Mr Barny the dinosaur..

Carl looked down, i could see he was breaking.. He just handed me my phone and went to her. He picked her up and they started walking away while pushing the IV too... That moment

really tore deep inside..

PART 17 ANGEL: SAMMY'S HEART

March 29, 2016 [visionarywritings](#)

I couldn't really ignore what I saw, it got me wondering the whole day it was truly sad.....

The following day i decided to go and look for the little girl in the children's ward. I searched and searched till I found her.....

She was sitting on her bed with her colouring book and coloring pens.. The TV was on she was watching Cartoons.... I took a deep breath then walked in..... Me: Hi..

She looked at me then went back to colouring..Me: Wow what are you coloring?

Her: Its a whale Me: Can i sit?

She nodded her head.

I sat down....

Me: My name is Sammy, what is your name?

Her: My name is Jeany and I'm 5 Years old..She was smart for a 5 year old.... Her:

Are you dying too?

Me: No...

Her: I'm dying i have cancer of the Lumia..

Her voice was so sweet, and she was very adorable..Me: I'm sorry about that..

She didn't reply she continued colouring.... Me: Is Carl gonna come and see you?

Her: Carl is my brother....

Carl walked in as we were talking, he was surprised to see me there...

He went and kissed her, then sat next to her all cuddling her tiny body was soo sweet... Carl: What is that?

Jean: a whale

Carl: Were do you find a whale this days Her:

In the sea..

Carl: i thought they lived in the grass Her:

No stupid they live in the sea..

They both laughed, i found myself laughing too.. Her: will i see whales when I die?

That topic just rubs Carl the wrong way... Carl:

i told you that I'm not gonna let you die..Her: But the Doctor... Carl:

No the doctor is wrong... The

nurse came in.. Nurse: Goodmorning We greeted back..

Her: Jeany it's time for you to bath..Jeany: Okay.

She got out of bed and went to the nurse.Carl: I'll be here when you come back..

She smiled, the nurse held her by her hand and then they

went..... He looked at me.

Me: I'm sorry for just coming to see your sister witho.. Him: Its fine..

He looked at his Rolex watch..

Him: She has leukaemia. The doctor says if she doesn't get a donor soon she's gonna die... That was just sad..

Him: She's just 5 years old, i can't accept that she's gonna die...

He was still hot as ever, I could see the pain in his eyes which were a bit teary.... Me: Life Is unfair....

Life was just unfair indeed i mean she's 5 can't God spare her????

..

For the time being that i was at that hospital, i spent most of my time with Jeany and Carl. Under all that Arrogance, Carl was very sweet... I had also opened up to the psychologist and i was required to see her every Friday....

The doctor discharged me, Jean was very heartbroken, she even cried because Me and her were becoming good friends...

I promised to come and visit her every now and then.....

Richardson came to fetch me and we went home.....

It was very quiet when i got in, i wondered were everyone was...

I didn't do much i just showered and then slept a bit, being in that hospital made me exhausted....

Later on Carl sent me a message that i should meet him at the lounge later on and that i should come with my 2 friends, obviously Melody and Kresi were on my list...

..

Haike we prepared ourselves, it was Thursday night. I wore a dress that was open at the sides, i also wore leggings with knee boots... I put on make up and the way i did my hair was a new style.

I did a hump and then tied it into a ponytail at the back.....

Richardson drove us to the lounge, Carl and his hot friends still make me nervous..... It was just him and Gesh, i wondered were the other one was..

We joined them in the vip section.. Him:

Thank you for coming yall..

We just smiled. Melody was very nervous that she couldn't even look Gesh in the eye I

just hope she doesn't get a panic attack.....

Their other friend came in just after us, he was wearing formal tonight. He was wearing a shirt, Pants and formal shoes... He didn't have his hat on so now i could see how hot he was.....

Carl: Here comes the CEO
Him: Don't start dog
He sat down, didn't even greet us or look at us... Gesh: Are you cashrupting daddy?
Carl laughed...
I noticed that Carl and Gesh had red bandannas around their wrists but the other friend didn't....
I wondered what they symbolised.. Carl: Ohh my bad..
He looked at us...
Carl: This are my cats, this is Gesh and this is Tpee.. Me: I'm Sammy and this is Kresi and melody..
Tpee looked at us and then continued being on his phone....
Gesh was looking at melody and that made Melody a bit nervous.. Carl looked at me...
Him: Let's go get drinks....
I stood up and we went, he was walking behind me. When we got to the bar he was standing behind me with his hand on my waist, making its way down..
Me: Stop it..
Him: No one is looking..
He bit me on my neck and i laughed.. I pushed him off a bit with my Ass.. Me: Stop it!
He whispered in my ear..
Him: Maybe we can sneak out of here, what do you say??? I turned around and looked at him..
Me: You just wanna fuck Me don't you?
He bit his lower lip and ran his hand on my Ass.. Him: Is that a bad thing?
I wanted him to fuck me, maybe that's just the prostitute in me... Me: Okay...
He held my hand and we walked out to his car, but we were all over each other that we didn't get in the car... He just threw me against the car and came closer.... Him: i wanted to fuck you the very same day that i saw you..
Me: Well now it's your chance..
He kissed me while his hand was on my thigh. As much as he

wanted me, i also wanted him.....

Things were getting tense, he completely took off my leggings and i wasn't wearing any underwear...

He looked at me..

Him: I swear you came prepared..

I smiled while unbuckling his belt....Eish a slut is what I am being fucked against a car. But luckily it's not just any car, it's a Ferrari...

He lifted my right leg up while holding it for support and then he entered me i gasped.. Him: You really wet..

Ya maybe that's because i wanted him so bad.....

He just went for it, started pumping me and as we went along he increased his pace.. It was pain and pleasure at the same time, I was moaning and holding him tight, he had no Mercy that I thought I was gonna fall.....

PART 18 ANGEL: SAMMY'S HEART

March 29, 2016 [visionarywritings](#)

KRESI

the table was clear, was just me and Tpee. Sammy was with Carl, and Melody was with Gesh.....

Tpee was on his phone, and i was just sitting there not knowing what to say or do in that

awkward silence..... I decided to break the Ice.Me: Great night isn't it?

He ignored me, he was still busy with his phone... Me: You not the talking type are you? He still kept quiet..

Me: So what do you do? I mean your job description Ofcause...

He looked at me. That made me nervous his look was not sincere at all..... Him: Can't you just fucken drink your cocktail and stop annoying me?

Yooh!!

Me: Oookay (low voice)

I decided to keep quiet.....

.

.

MELODY

We were in Gesh's car getting it down. We were at the back seats with me ontop of him.. He was taking my clothes off while we were busy kissing....

I wasn't scared of him in that moment, or maybe it's because of the alcohol in Me... I was left with my bra and underwear, he was left with his pants. He was kissing my body all over, while i closed my eyes and bit my lower lip.....

He was breathing heavy, he wanted me and wanted him. He was squeezing my body against his.... He slowly put his hand in my Bumshort and started rubbing my already wet Vjajay..... I wanted him, i truly wanted him inside of me....

Me: You gonna make.. You gonn.... I'm coming.. Him: Not yet..

He reached down in his pocket and took out a condom....

I helped him take off his pants. I opened the condom and rolled it down on him.....He held me on my butt and slid me down on him....

I went up and down on him, while he was sucking my nipples
Lord have Mercy..

Me: Ohhhhhhhhhhhh Geshhhhhhh...

The way he was caressing my body, this guy knows his story...

.
. .

SAMMY

After that steamy session we fixed ourselves. As i was about to walk he held me back against the car and kissed me again..

Him: What the fuck are you doing to me? I can't seem to get enough of you..If only he knows how much i can't get enough of him too.

Me: We have to go before our friends start sending out a search party for us.. He kissed me again..

Him: Let's go then..

We started walking to the lounge, with him stopping me along the way and kissing me. The chemistry between us was just too strong, not even Chris has ever made me feel this way.....

We finally got to our table, only Kresi and Tpee were there.

We sat down.. Carl: Where's Gesh?

Tpee: i have no idea

Tpee was on his phone, i looked at Kresi she looked a bit irritated..

She signalled to me that we must go and talk privately. We excused ourselves and went to talk but we weren't too far from Carl and Tpee..

Kresi: Okay like I'm done..

I was busy staring at Carl, he was looking at me too while biting his lower lip and winking at me, i was all blushing and smiling...

Kresi: This Tpee guy is impossible!! He is arrogant and
ixeleling i high! (he is full of himself) we should just go..
I was still looking at Carl.. Kresi got irritated..

Kresi: Oh my word I'm done!!! She walked away.. Me:
Kresi wait..

Her: You'll find Me at home!!!

I just let her be and went to join Tpee and Carl... Tpee didn't
stay with us that long, he left because of some documents that
he has to work on.....was just Carl and myself left..

Him: I think i should also go, got some work to do... He looked
at me..

Him: And you are coming with me to my place..I was hoping
he was gonna say that.....

We walked out of the lounge to his car, and drove to his
place....

I was all teasing him as he was driving by putting my leg on top
of him which made it a bit hard for him to concentrate on
driving.....

We finally arrived at his house, i couldn't see the outside of it
because it was dark but from how quiet and peaceful it was, i
could tell it was in a porch neighbourhood..... His house was
big, more like a double story....

The gate opened and he drove In...

Him: Stay in the car while i go and lock my dogs Me:

Okay..

He got out and locked his doors then came to fetch me and we
went in.... His house was very beautiful more than

Chris' penthouse... Carl must be rich i wonder what he does....

He was hugging me from behind..

Him: Welcome to my house Me: Wow it's beautiful..

Him: Its alright

Me: What do you do for you to afford a house like this? Him: i
am a mere Architect

Me: Really? Are you paying mortgage Him:

No i bought it cash..

Me: How much did it cost? Him: 7mill

My jaw Dropped...

We walked into the dinning room and the was a huge portrait of him, his sister and his parents i think..

Me: Are those your parents? Him: Yes..

Me: Were are they? Him: They passed on..

Me: I'm sorry, what happened?

Him: That's a story for another day.. Me: So who do you live with?

He picked me up and put me ontop of the dinning table which could accommodate 10 guests, while coming in between my legs..

Him: just me and my sister, but you can move in if you want... I laughed...

Me: You serious?

He was serious, he wasn't even laughing.. Me: Carl i don't know

He lifted up my dress and took it off.. Him: What don't you know?

He was kissing me softly on my cleavage that wasn't shy to pop out of my bra... Him: i am attracted to you sexually, physically, emotionally, mentally i just want you!

He said that while squeezing me tight on my ribs..... It was a bit painful...

He then kissed me.... This guy bathong!!!

His doorbell rang, then the door opened and closed... His face changed.

Him: Who the fuck is that just entering in my house without my permission!!!

I could see he was pissed... I tried to put on my dress but it was late, some white guy walked in the room.

Carl: Fuck Taylor how did you get in?!

This guy had a blue Bandana around his wrist, unlike Carl who had a red one..

Him: It wasn't that difficult believe me.. He looked at me, then Carl.

Him: Can we talk? I need your help

Carl looked at me. He kissed me on my cheek.. Him: I'll be right back

Carl: Let's go to my study Mr Duvenhage..

They walked out... I was still sitting the wondering if i should follow them and eavesdrop or just keep my nose out of his business..

PART 19 ANGEL: SAMMY'S HEART

March 29, 2016 [visionarywritings](#)

I stood by the door at his study watching him work. I had taken a bath and I'm wearing one of his T-shirts..

He had his laptop open, there was a lot of papers on top of his table. He had a pencil on his right hand, and the other hand he had a glass of whiskey of which he took a sip and then put it down.. He rotated his cap backwards to have a clear vision of what he was doing... He was also playing music on his laptop, that picture reminded me of my workaholic ex boyfriend Chris.....

Carl has been in here for an hour now, after talking to that white guy...

I still don't know what they were talking about, I didn't wanna eavesdrop...

He was singing and rapping along to the song and you could clearly see his dimples too yaa Carl was just on another level with looks..

Carl: if i ever said I'm never scared, just know i mean it.. If i ever said i fucked your bitch, Just know i mean it.. And if I ever said I'm getting money just know i mean it.. And oh Lord, oh Lord knows, he knows i mean it-Rapping..

He lifted his head up after a while and realised that I've been standing there looking at him... He smiled..

Him: for how long have you been standing there?

I walked up to him, and he closed his laptop. I sat on top of him.. Me: Not that long, what are you working on?

I saw drawings that were so neat and Perfect, looked like a house..

Me: Wow you know how to draw.. He laughed..

Him: Of course i know how to draw, i went to school for this shit... Me: Carl?

Him: Mmm?

Me: What did that man want?

Him: He wanted me to draw up a plan for this house, he's trying to build it for his wife whose a bit sick now and at the hospital..

He wants to surprise her when she gets out..

Me: Ncoooh that's sweet,men like that don't exist anymore..

He gave me a weird look.. I squeezed his cheek..

Me: That statement doesn't include you at all..

Him: It better not.. I chuckled..

Him: have you thought about what I've said? I looked at him a bit puzzled.. Him: About you moving in?

Me: Carl it's still early and risky

Him: You the risk I'm willing to take, you can't deny what's happening between us

His right, there is something happening between us... Me:

Can i at least think about it?

Him: Its Ayt but can you stay here for a few days? Plus i need you to accompany me to an all black function tomorrow..

Me: uhm i don't have clothes Him: Don't worry about that...

Me: Okay are you ready to go to bed? Him:

Ya but i need to bath first..

He picked me up, and we went to the bedroom....

I noticed that the bandanna on his wrist he only takes it off only when he baths...

There was something strange that didn't add up. His house is full of The Game's pictures and posters and also posters written "The bloods"..... And everything that he wears has to be red and black, and he adds a bit of white but not any other colour...

He joined me in bed after bathing and all that.. He was laying behind me with his hand around my waist and i was playing with his Bandana..

Me: Carl

Him: Yes Bokkie?

Hmmmmmm now I'm Bokkie...

Me: What's this Bandana for? Him: Its just an honour Me:

What honour?

Him: Do we have to talk about this now?

Me: Its okay if you don't wanna talk about it..

He exhaled and i could feel his warm breath hitting my neck..

Him: It represents blood and honour of our loved ones and friends that were killed in the streets.. This is how we remember them..

Me: Ohw..

He kissed me on my neck.

Him: Let's sleep..

Me: Okay night..

Him: i love you..

My heart started beating a bit fast, i don't like that word at all..

Me: me too..

Him: No i don't wanna hear that i said "i love you" Me: And i said me too..

He turned me around to look at him... Him: What is Me too?

Me: It means that i...

I couldn't say it.. I haven't heard anyone say that word to me sincerely..I faced the other way, I could feel tears coming..

He put his hand on my chin and turned my face to look at him..

Him: What's wrong? Me: Its nothing..

Him: Don't create a wall between us, we have to be..

Me: Carl please don't push...I'm not comfortable yet with saying those words don't force me..

He didn't force the situation he just kissed my teary eyes and laid back on his pillow facing the other way..

Probably I'll have the courage to say those words one day...

.

.

.

KRESI

I had received a message from Sammy, saying that i should meet her at the mall...

I woke up that morning and bathe, and then i put on an ordinary outfit. Just a short, gladiator sandals, and a lace top....

I put on my glasses and took my bag then went downstairs to have Richardson drive me to the mall..

Everyone was still asleep they had a crazy night yesterday.. It was 8am.....

.....

.....

It didn't take us long to get to the mall, i met up with Sammy for breakfast at some expensive English restaurant... I hugged her and we sat down..

Her: You look good

Me: You look good too.

What am i saying she always looks good..

Me: So what am i doing here so Early in the morning?

Her: Can't i just go out shopping with my friend. Me: Were did you get the money? She pulled out a platinum card..

Yaa Sammy was lucky, always landing herself this rich guys.... I couldn't even hide my jealousy..

Me: Yey(low voice)Her: What's wrong?

Me: i don't wanna sound jealous but you always land yourself
this rich guys who treat you
right and worship you while some of us are stuck to being
prostitutes..She extended her hand to touch mine...

Her: Don't talk like that..I was now In tears..

Me: I'm tired Sammy,I've been a prostitute since from the age of 18 now I'm 25. I ran away from home because my mother's boyfriend use to rape me. I would tell my mom but she would Beat me and say I'm lying I'm the one who seduces him...I don't know how many abortions I've had because of him.... I ran away to live in the streets of jhb then i lived at hiltrow with other prostitutes and life there for me was tough until moghana saved me...

I have dreams too, i wanna Leave this life and have a man that's gonna love me, worship me and treat me better.. I wanna have kids. I don't wanna be killed by this life.. I was crying now, not realising that she was also in tears now...

She came to hug me and we cried together.....

After that heart to heart, we went to do shopping she also brought me a few clothes.. We skipped breakfast i wasn't In the mood for a full meal.....

After what seemed to be forever we got pies and drove back to her place as i can call it now..She was driving an all black range rover but it was Carl's.....

We got to the house and as soon as i opened my side of the door i saw a pit bull running to the car i closed.....

I was shocked to see that Kyle has 4 dogs. 2 Chinese pit bulls, and 2 Rottweilers..Me: What the hell Is Carl doing with such vicious dogs? Sammy:

Let me call him..

She called him, and he came to lock them up then we went inside the house.....

Carl wasn't alone, Tpee was there sitting at the kitchen table busy on his tab... Ya that guy is wow especially with his hat.. He didn't even acknowledge my presence...

Sammy: Carl why don't you help me go pack this clothes...

I gave Sammy a serious look like "bitch don't leave me here with him" she gave me a look that said "This is your chance"...

She walked away with Carl following her.....

I was left with this arrogant nigga who thinks the whole world should tremble at his feet... I was standing there busy tapping my fingers on the table, i guess that irritated him because he gave a weird look... I stopped, and started again.. He looked at me again this time the look was all like "Girl if you don't stop that" i decided to go for it as he was still looking at me like that..

Me: I was about to make myself something to eat, would you like something too?

He looked at me, then went back to his tab.... Me: is that a yes or no?

He looked at me and exhaled, i could see he wanted to be rude but something prevented him from being rude..

Him: You can make me an Apple-Cheddar tartane exclude the cheddar.. Me: An Apple what, can we try a less complicated meal?

He looked at me for a long time i don't know what his look meant... Me: i was just gonna make a simple Fru..

Him: Fruit salad..

Me: Yeah how did you know?

He gave me a side smile.. He looked more cute when he smiled, can't he always be like this???

He continued smiling and stood up then took his tab and started walking to the door.. Me: Just like that??? I swear you such a spoiled brat!!!

He stopped and turned around, to look at me.. He came to me i won't lie i was scared, i tried moving backwards but the table didn't allow me... He put his tab aside then picked me up and put me ontop of the table.. Yoooh i don't know where he gets this much strength... He had his hands around my waist, he leaned closer i thought he was gonna kiss me, but unfortunately he didn't...

Him: I'm trying to avoid you, please make yourself useful and be avoided!! He then took his tab and Walked out... Leaving me still intoxicated by his cologne

PART 20 ANGEL: SAMMY'S HEART

March 29, 2016 [visionarywritings](#)

I went back to the kitchen and found Kresi drinking wine and crying... Me: Hau what happened?

She gulped the wine in the glass, and closed her eyes then opened them.. Her: I'm just fishing for the impossible

Me: What happened?

Her: Akangeneki lo Tpee wenu maan! It's like his heart is locked with alot of chains etc.. Carl came to the kitchen, he had his Nikey back pack..

Him: Bokkie I'm going out for a while, I'll be back before
18:00 Me: Okay

He kissed me on my forehead.. Him: I love you.. Me:
me too

He then walked out, Kresi started raining with tears... I don't
know If she was this heartbroken or it's the wine... I picked up
the wine bottle it was halfway.. Her: ngiyamthanda u Tpee (i
love Tpee)

I love him Sammy and i don't understand because we don't even know each other that well.. Me: That is weird! She continued..

Her: and yena akang'funi (he doesn't want me) he said his trying to avoid and i must make myself useful and be avoided..

Me: Wtf??? He said that literally? She nodded her head yes..

Me: Who the hell does he think he is! I mean he is hot but his attitude stinks. She sat down and laid her head on the table...

Her: There's nothing to live for.. He doesn't want me

I don't understand Why Kresi is soo much in love with Tpee and she doesn't even know him at all..

Me: Let me get you to bed..

Her: i don't wanna sleep, i want Tpee

Me: I'll call him, but he can't find you in this state.. Her:

Really you'll call him?

Me: Yes...

I helped her to walk and we got to the guest and i just threw her on the bed... I took off her shoes and laid her nicely in bed.....

..

The rest of my afternoon i spent it at the mall, getting my hair and my nails done for

Tonight... I have to look my best, I'm representing Carl i don't want his colleagues thinking otherwise of me.. After all that i went back home to take a long relaxing bath.....Carl got in just when i got out of the bathtub and went to the bedroom to clothe.. My outfit was already on the bed. I was to wear a long black dress that's open on the side all the way up to my thigh. I was also gonna wear my black pencil heels..... It was a long sleeve dress that was completely open at the back....

Carl came to me and hugged me. Him:

You smell good..

Me: i haven't even dressed up yet..

Him: must be your shower gel or something.. Me: Probably

Him: i like your hair Me: Thank you...

I did something like a razor cut but mine came at the front and

covered my left eye a lil. It
was black and short with blonde highlights.... Him: Are those
eye lashes real?Me: No they glued them on one by one
He tried touching them but i hit his hand Off..

Me: Don't touch them....and go bath before we get late Him:
You looking forward to it?

Me: i just wanna know your colleagues and what you do.....

He kissed me and then walked to the bathroom.... Me:

Is Tpee gonna come?

Him: No i don't work with Tpee, i work with Gesh..

I went to the bathroom and stood by the door as he was
showering..

Me: Carl what's the story with Tpee? Him: What do you mean?

Me: His just weird.. Him: His just like that.. Me: Is he seeing

anyone? Him: Not that i know off Me: interesting

Him: Why do you ask?

Me: Because he has stolen my friend's heart..

He kept quiet.. I went to put on lotion and clothe, i also put on
make up with black earrings... Carl came out and
complimented me.....

He wore a black suit that looked very good on him. He had
shaved his hair and trimmed it
and his side burns Lord Jesus i couldn't help but stare at him as
he was fixing his cufflinks....He wasn't wearing a tire he just
unbuttoned his shirt at the front and revealing a black
Bandana around his neck. He didn't forget to put on the red
one on his wrist... He looked at me.

Him: Can i do something without you asking alot of questions?

Me: uhm okay..

He opened his drawer and took out a red bandana then rolled it
around my wrist... Me: And Th..

He put his finger on my lips.. Him:

No questions..

I kept quiet... We then walked out to his range rover and went
to wherever we were supposed to go.....

..

We drove up to a warehouse, that was strange. It was in the
middle of nowhere, no cars passing there it just stood alone.....

I promised not to ask questions so i kept quiet...

We got out and damn the was expensive black cars around....

We were a bit late and we just walked in while holding hands....

Although it looked like just an abandoned warehouse, but inside damn! The way it was

Decorated Lord have Mercy.....

It was Decorated in black and red, the table and chairs glasses were black and dishes were Red.....

It was just one long table that could accommodate around 20 guests.....

They were playing "The Game-Dreams"...

... Some white bitch came to us. She was wearing a red bubble dress with black heels also had a Bandana around her wrist....

He hugged Carl and Carl kissed her on her cheek.. Carl:

You still working for the bloods? Her: I'll never stop the pay is good..

They looked at each other all smiling, she was blushing Carl was looking at her from head to

toe, i truly felt disgusted.... I cleared my throat..

Carl: Ohh this is my Lady Sammy and Sammy this is Candice..

She shook my hand...

Her: Nice knowing you Sammy Me: Same to you Candy

She gave me a smile... Her:

Its Candice..

I smiled and looked at her.. Me: What?

Her: You said Candy..

I sent out a silly giggle.. Me: Ohw sorry Candice..

Carl gave me a weird look with a smile on his face..

Candice: Your chairs are the second ones you'll see they have your names... Carl: Thank you

We walked up to the table, he put his hand around my waist but i removed it.... I spotted the chair that was encrypted my name on it and i sat down... Carl sat next to me.. He kissed me on my cheek..

Him: I'm sorry

I just ignored him... Him: Bokkie please..

I faced the other way, I felt disrespected by him.. He left me, then i faced my front...

The song changed to "The Game ft kendrick-City" while we were still sitting there Gesh

walked in he was with this beautiful woman with him.. She

was light in complexion with curly long hair.. She was wearing a short sexy tight dress..... Yoooh she was beautiful my

mouth was slightly opened was all drooling over her... Gesh looked wow too in that black suit.. They came to us and we stood up..

Gesh and Carl greeted each other with those Gangster hand shakes. Then Carl hugged the girl, she looked young like my age... Had a beautiful thick body nyana... Carl: Khanyo..

Her: Carl They hugged

Carl: Wow you look beautiful, it's like you didn't give birth.. She laughed and then looked at me..

Carl: This is my lady Sammy, Bokkie meet Nokhanya She hugged me..

Her: You look beautiful Me: You beautiful too

She smiled...she had a ring on her finger..

Carl: Nokhanya is Gesh's wife they have a son his two now.. I looked at Gesh with my eyes wide opened. His fucking melody Mara he has a wife, and worse a wife that looked like Beyonce... I looked at Gesh..

He looked at me as if like say something bitch.... They went and took their seats...

Some white couple started walking in, they came to us and they was introduced as Jennifer and Brad.....

We were all sitting but there were 4 seats that were empty We were served champagne by the waitress.....

Haike some 2 white women walked in, one looked lesbian they were introduced as Gina and

Jamie apparently they were a couple.....

Only two chairs left..... I leaned over to Carl..

Me: Who are we waiting for? Him: The boss...

After a few minutes i saw niggas who were dressed in black getting in holding guns that

looked like snipers. They were standing opposite each other in a line as if like A president is about to be paraded inside..

I saw everyone standing up with their hands on their backs.....

A specific song was played which was “loyalty-birdman ft lil wayne and tyga”

.....

A specific part was being played which was “Family i love, don’t wanna Leave this world alone so before i leave home , i pray to God i won’t loyalty is all i know”

.....

A white nigga walked in, he was limping a bit and had a Gold cane that he was balancing with as he was walking.. Beside him was a beautiful plus 10 lady. Okay all the woman in his room were beautiful but that bitch Kim kardashian i tell you especially her body Lord have Mercy!! She was wearing a white dress that hugged her body perfectly, she was wearing gold and white heels she just looked expensive from her weave to her heels which were a bit higher than mine and she was rocking them like there's no tomorrow.. The rock on her finger though must've cost a fortune....

I looked at her nigga, his suit was black but that design was different.. Akamuhle u brother thixo! And the authority he has i saw heart beats, beating visibly through all the niggas shirts, i could tell how much everyone feared and respected him....

I looked at him, he looked alot like That guy who came to see Carl, Mr Duvenhage or something....

PART 21 ANGEL: SAMMY'S HEART

March 29, 2016 [visionarywritings](#)

Everyone took their seats as this man prepared to say a few words..

He looked at us, the room was completely quiet even the music had been turned off.... Him: I would like to welcome all of you, thank you for coming to another family gathering of ours.. We are not just "The bloods" but by blood we are united which makes us a strong family.

Many envy us, many hate us, many wanna be like us, and many want us to perish.... We have experienced alot but we always come out strong and alive.

Can we just fucken give ourselves a round of applause that our enemies tried killing us but even today they haven't succeeded...

Everyone started clapping.....

Him: There's a few people that I would like to thank individually who played a crucial role in my life.. He turned to his side and looked at his wife.

Him: first of all i wanna thank my wife, my snuggle

bunny..... She was all blushing..

Him: This woman has been through thick and thin with me, i love her more than i love myself. She's one of the reasons why i wake up in the morning and decide to live this shitty life....

He held her hand, while she was still sitting down..

Him: Anathi thank you for always having my back. It must've been hard to love someone like me especially with my lifestyle that has always put our family in danger. I knew that you were the one for me when you refused to leave me..

She was now tearing up...

Him: i love you soo much and I'll always love you. You'll always be my snuggle bunny.. She giggled through those tears...

He leaned over and kissed her while everyone was cheering up for them... That was an adorable moment, I wish I had that..

He then continued with his speech

Him: the next person that I wanna thank is My long time best buddy Brad and her wife Jennifer.. I started this group with them, they were the first members of the bloods. And for that I thank you guys especially your loyalty that runs deep... People started clapping again.

This sounds like a Gangster group of some sort I swear, Carl has not been quite honest with me..

Him: I would like to thank My sister Gina and her partner Jamie. Although Gina once shot me and sided with the enemy but thank you for remembering where home is, because your loyalty lies with us. And Jamie thank you for being my day one nigga, always by my side always willing to lay down your life in order to save mine...

People clapped for them... He then looked at Carl..

Him: Carl, although you have just joined us recently and although you are the youngest but you are also the smartest. The bloods wouldn't be the bloods without your magnificent brain that has always made us to attain the number one spot. I hope that you will forever remain with us because honestly the bloods would crash without you! He raised up his champagne glass Him: To Carl..

Everyone raised up their glasses too to honour Carl...

He then looked at Gesh and cleared his throat, Gesh was looking down. I could feel the vibe between them...

Him: y'all know about my shooting which happened at Gesh's place.

The shooting almost took my life. It almost left my wife without a husband and my kids without a father....

It is no lie that Gesh and I go way back his always been my number one nigga and I've always favoured him, but we cannot deny the fact that he has been drinking from the same cup with my Enemy and that spells out betrayal to me.. Its not

Gesh only but Carl too..

I would really hate to see us being enemies. Anyone who knows me knows that you don't wanna be the Sniper's enemy. Either you fuck with me or you fuck with Tpee but you can't fuck with both....

So this guy and Tpee are enemies? Ya neh there's alot that's going on here.... Him: That concludes my speech, let's just enjoy ourselves....

He then sat down. Starters were brought in first, then Entree, and we closed the meal off with dessert.....

When we were done eating we just went to mingle with a few people..

I didn't really mingle with other people i was just standing there with Carl Him: How did you find the whole experience?

Me: intriguing i must say..He sipped on his whiskey.Me: Carl
He looked at me..

Me: What Is it that you do?

Him: i told you that I'm an architect for the bloods... I looked
at him..

Him: You can ask around its the truth.I decided to let it go...

Gesh Came to us, because his wife was with The Sniper's wife.
They looked quite close.

Carl: How did you find the big man's speech Gesh: uyahlanya
uRiley(his crazy)

Carl: i mean Tpee is our day one nigga and there's no way that
we gonna drop him because Riley decided to make him his
enemy..

Me: It sounds like the beef that they have is deadly!! Gesh: You
have no idea!

He said that while sipping on his Heineken..

.
.

KRESI

I had a headache probably was the wine that i drank. I decided
to go and bath then put on Sammy's pjs..

I went to the kitchen to make myself something to eat when the
door bell rang.... I went to open and well, well, well it was
Tpee.... I leaned on the door..

Me: Can i help you?

He looked at me then laughed a bit Him: Is Carl here?

I shook my head no..

Me: He went to some work function Him: i totally forgot about
that..

I wasn't gonna beat around the bush anymore..

Me: What does it take for someone to steal your heart? He
looked at me confused..

Him: Let me guess you have a thing for me? Me: I'm not
denying

Him: What's your name again?

Me: Kresi

Him: Look Kresi you attractive and all that and I'm sure there's a guy out there who would like to date you and treat you right, but unfortunately that guy is not me..

I looked at him with a bit of tears in my eyes.. Me:

What if you are that guy for me?

Him: You cannot possibly date me Me:

Why?

Him: Because I'm... I'm just not the type of guy you would

wanna date.. Me: How would you know that if we haven't tried?

Me: i think it's best i just go..

He walked away then stopped. He turned around and came back to kiss me while pushing me back inside the house...

He closed the door behind him and picked me up, and put me against the wall with my legs wrapped around him...

We continued kissing, and i just realised from then that sex with this guy is probably not gonna be normal...

He moved me and put me on the table while literally ripping my pj top or should i say Sammy's pj top..

He was a beast i can tell...

PART 22 ANGEL: SAMMY'S HEART

March 31, 2016 [visionarywritings](#)

SAMMY

Carl and i drove back home, my feet were killing me, i couldn't wait to bath and just sleep... He opened the door and we got in, Carl was holding my heels and my bag for me.....

Me: That is the last time I'm going out with you.. He laughed...

We noticed Kresi sitting at the kitchen drinking wine, i thought to myself "Not again"... This Time around she didn't look depressed or sad, she looked like she had been attacked, my pjs that she was wearing were ripped, her weave was all over the place, she looked like a mess... I quickly went up to her.

Me: Omg Kresi what happened? Did someone get in and attack

you?

She shook her head no. She looked like she was in pain.. She looked at Carl.. Her: Tpee was here, he said his gonna call you.. Carl had a smirk on his face and just nodded at Kresi.. Kresi stood up all moaning in pain, the way she walked gosh it just showed that she was in pain....I looked at Carl. Me: Ohh my GodCarl someone attacked her Carl still had that smirk in his face..

Him: No one attacked her, Tpee was here... He said that while walking to the bedroom...

I stood there all dumb founded until i realised what he was talking about. So Kresi finally got

Tpee...

I went to the guest room, she was in the bathroom all screaming in pain, she was in pain. I sat on the bed waiting for her...

She came out after a while walking slow looking like she's ready to cry..Me: So you and Tpee?

She couldn't seat down on the bed so she kneeled down on the floor..

Her: i don't wanna talk about that for now.. I'm in too much pain Me: Shame sweety, was it that hectic? She looked at me.

Me: It was.. I can't even explain it but it wasn't bad or hectic it was just wow.. No nigga has fucked me like that..

I laughed.

Her: Sammy that guy is just amazing

Me: How is he amazing if you fucked you soo hard that you can't even walk? Her: Its not like that, it's just that i haven't had hardcore sex like this for a while..I laughed

Me: Look at you, you glow when you talk about him.. She blushed.

Her: i just wish that he could open his heart to me, you know his heart is locked up..

Me: Just don't give up on him..I stood up.

Me: Let me go my man is waiting for me..

I walked out to my bedroom, Carl had already passed out.. I went and kissed him on his cheek then went to bath.... Then joined him in bed....

..

..

..

KRESI

I woke up that morning and bathe, i had to go back to the house. I heard lady moghana was at it, melody had sent me a

message...

Sammy drove me to the mall where Richardson was to pick me up.....I hugged her before we departed. Me: when are you coming back?

Her: i don't know hey, I'm still having a normal life with Carl...

Me: When are you gonna tell him about who you are or what you are rather? Her: When are you telling Tpee

Me: Tpee and i we not in a serious relationship She looked down

Her: I'm scared to tell him, what if he goes Chris on me?

Me: Tell him before he finds out from someone else like Chris did, don't repeat the same mistakes that you did with Chris..

Her: i don't know Kresi, you can't just walk up to someone and say "Hey I'm a prostitute and i have a sex tape"

Me: ive seen you with Carl. He loves you

Me: Chris loved me too until he found out that I'm a prostitute..I looked at her..

Her: Forget it Kresi... She hugged me again.. Her:

Hope to see you soon Me: I'm hoping so too..

She walked out to the range rover and i went to the Cadillac, Richardson opened the door for

me...

..

I got to Friend-Segal and everyone had gathered at the lounge, looked like it was a meeting of some sort.

Moghana was holding her wine glass as always.. Moghana: Its nice of you to join us, please have a seat. I sat down.

Her: Were is Sammy? Me: i have no idea

Her: Were have you been? Me: i had a hook up

Her: Were is my money?

I kept quiet. She stood up and poured herself wine again..

Her: I'm getting tired of this! I'm getting sick and tired of this!! You girls are becoming useless to me

We all kept quiet.

Her: This month we made only 30 000 and that was from Peejay and Remooh combined. You Kresi and Angel together with Melody i seriously don't know what you doing with your lives!! Is the something you girls wanna tell me?

Melody and i looked at each other..

Her: i give you only 15 days to make me 50 000 We looked at her.

Her: Yes! Call your Angel and tell her because she's ignoring

my calls..She sat down..

Her: Angel is playing with fire, i swear she doesn't know who she's Messing with!!! Moghana is a dangerous woman, Angel must get herself together...

.

.

. #SAMMY

Carl and i were on the lounge floor playing dominos. I was wearing his T-shirt and he was shirtless only wearing his boxers. We were drinking wine and eating pizza too it was just a lazy night..

Her: Tomorrow I'm fetching Jeany from hospital

Me: That's great i can't wait to see her He kissed me on my shoulder..

Him: The doctor said she's making good progress.

Me: That's very good ain't it? He shrugged his shoulders

Me: What's wrong I thought you'd be happy..

Him: I just can't get over the fact that she's gonna die soon

Me: Don't concentrate on that, just create happy memories with her while she's still alive... He smiled.

Him: What would i do without you? I smiled...

His phone rang, he looked at it and answered it..

Him: G..... Shit i forgot about that... Yeah I'm on my way..

He then hunged up.. Him: i have to go Me: Where too? Him:

race night with my cats (Tpee&Gesh) Me:

Can i come along too?

He looked at me.. Him: Ya why not..

We walked up to the bedroom and changed.. Then he took the Ferrari car keys and we left..... While he was busy driving i saw a Police Van following us..

It has been following us for a while now...

Me: have you noticed that this cop car keeps on following us?

Him: Yeap..

It signalled that he must pull over..

He took his phone and called Gesh then put it on loud speaker..

Gesh: G where are you man?

Carl: I've just been pulled over.. Gesh: Are you at the usual

spot?

Carl: Yeap

Gesh: How many vans?

Carl: just one..

Gesh: We coming..

He hunged up and pulled over..

The van stopped behind us and two Cops came to the Ferrari...

Carl rolled down the window.. Officer1: Carl Shaw, and we meet again Carl: Hello officer..

Officer1: Can you please step out of the car Carl:
For what reason?

The police officer got very irritated... Him:
i said step out of the car!! Carl: For what..

The police officer took out his gun.. And opened the door he roughly pulled Carl out of the car, and the other officer got me out..

Carl: Eyy handle my lady with care! They started handcuffing us..

Carl: Wtf?!

Officer1: You are under arrest Carl:
For what officer??

Officer1: You were driving too fast!

Carl: That's Bullshit!!!! You just have a personal vendetta with me.. The police officer turned him around and punched him..

Officer1: You need to watch how you address a police officer..
I was now scared

Me: Carl what's going on? Carl: This motherf*****

The officer punched him in his stomach and Carl was coughing...

This was highly unfair, first of all this people pulled us over for no reason at all. And worse this road was isolated no other cars were passing by..

They led us into the van.. Officer2: Now we have you boy!!

Officer1: I've always wanted to be the one whose gonna put you behind bars....

As we were being pushed to the police Van, we saw headlights, two cars were approaching us they were coming very fast.. The

two officers took out their guns....

I noticed that it was two Ferraris. They parked on the side then Gesh and Tpee came out, i saw Carl smiling...

The two Cops positioned themselves, ready to shoot... Gesh:
Don't do it officer, just don't do it..

I was standing there not ready to witness what's gonna happen..

PART 23 ANGEL: SAMMY'S HEART

March 31, 2016 [visionarywritings](#)

Insert23

Gesh was the first one to come closer, i don't know if he was crazy or what but he was unarmed with his hands up..

Tpee was behind him holding a gun.. Officer1: put your hands where i can see them..

Gesh: my hands are where you can see them! Wtf?! Officer2: Then stay where you are!

Gesh: i wish i can but you have my homie there.. Officer1: stay where you are I'm warning you..

Gesh didn't listen he continued coming. Officer1 shot him, i don't know where he shot him

but Gesh went down...

As soon as Gesh went down Tpee shot at the officer that shot Gesh and he didn't miss.. Carl kicked off the gun from the other cop and Tpee also shot the other officer...

It was almost as if like he was skilled in this because he didn't miss at all, and made sure that they don't get up.....

I ran up to Gesh, i know i don't like him but this guy just sacrificed his life for ours..

He had his hand on his stomach... Him:

He got me!

He was bleeding profusely and i couldn't help him because i was handcuffed... Tpee came to me with his gun..

Him: Hold still...

He shot the handcuffs and they fell off, was a bit painful...

Carl had his hand against Gesh now, who was in a lot of pain...

Carl: stay with Me man..

Tpee was making a few calls, while still holding his gun.. Carl was very fond of Gesh, i could see how broken he was... Gesh:

He got me man! He fuck.. He fucken got me...

Carl took off his jacket and pressed it against Gesh's wound to stop the bleeding.. Carl: Tpee we need to get him to the

hospital!

Tpee: i know I'm still trying to get someone to come collect his car, we can't leave it here in the crime scene... Carl: Then hurry!!

Carl looked at Gesh who looked like he was about to pass out... Gesh: If i don't make it man, tell Khanyo that i...

Carl: Don't talk like that G..

I could hear him sniffing i think he was crying.. Carl:

Remember the Anthem man?!

Gesh: The Anthe.. The.. Carl started singing..

Carl: "it's just me myself and you.. Together we ride till we die.. Because i got you for life" Carl was breaking

Carl: Remember you was the only one who believed Me when i joined the bloods?? You

risked your spot for me man you can't leave me now! Hold on

Gesh! I still need you G!!!

One thing i noticed about Carl is that If you mean alot to Carl you mean a lot to him.... Tpee came..

Tpee: Let's go..

The Ferraris were two seaters... Tpee: I'll drive with him

Carl: No I'll take him

Tpee: not in the state that you in! Carl: His my best friend I'll take him!

Tpee: Your driving will be reckless! I'll take him...

With that being said Tpee carried Gesh to his Ferrari, with the help of Carl Then

Carl came back and we got into his Ferrari and followed Tpee..

His Driving was reckless indeed, he was even playing music loud and rapping along.. Carl: "it's just me, myself and I

Solo ride until I die

„Cause I got me for life

I don't need a hand to hold Even when the night is cold I got that fire in my soul"

A particular part got to me that he was busy repeating which said:

"Pray to lord, my soul to take

My heart's become too cold to break Know I'm great but I'm broke as hell"

Carl and emotional don't go together now i see.....

..

With God's grace we got to the hospital, Gesh was attended too immediately. We stood there in the corridor, no one said a

word we were all quite....Tpee broke the Ice..

Tpee: i called Nokhanya while i was in the car, she's on her way. Carl: When Nokhanya gets here man i don't know anything..

Tpee: Don't say shit like that! We were trying to save your Ass! You gotta explain what happened to Nokhanya..

Carl kept quiet with his hands on his head. We were sitting down with his hands on his head.....

After an hour or so the Doctor came we all stood up... Doctor: His stable..

That's a relief..

Doctor: just for now..

Tpee: What do you mean for now?

Doctor: He had lost alot of blood we can't risk operating him now to take out the bullet because if he loses more blood his gonna die, so we'll have to let him regain his strength first..

Tpee: What If i Donate my blood to him

Doctor: That's thoughtful but the operation will make him lose more blood which can be fatal he might never wake up, so we need to postpone the operation for a while..

Eish Ya neh..

Doctor: If i may ask what happened? Tpee: Well i...

We then heard a female voice behind us.. Voice:

What happened?? Were is Gesh?

We turned around and it was Nokhanya she was with Riley's wife.. She looked at Tpee..

Her: Tpee what happened to my Gesh? He looked at Carl too..

Her: Carl what happened?

She was devastated, i bet if she could found out that he got shot she will collapse there.. Her: Doctor I'm his Fiancé what..

What happened?

Doctor: Well he.. He got shot and lost alot of blood..

She put her hands on her face, covering her mouth with tears forming in her eyes... Her: No.. What... Gesh!!!

She was stepping back. The boss lady went to hold her..

Khanyo: No Anathi!!! Gesh cannot do this to me!! Anathi: His not dead sweetheart, his still alright

She was crying and it was painful.. Her cries hit deep inside that all of us found ourselves abit emotional..

PART 24 ANGEL: SAMMY'S HEART

March 31, 2016 [visionarywritings](#)

We got home, and i was very tired it has been a long day. The doctor Assured us that Gesh will pull through, especially after the operation...

Carl threw himself on the bed. This situation with Gesh wasn't sitting very well with him.. My phone beeped and it was a WhatsApp message from Kresi saying:

“Moghana Is not very happy with your disappearance. Please come back before she does something drastic”

I wish this woman could just leave me alone. I threw my phone on the bed, while i exhaled. Carl looked at me.

Him: Come here..

I went and got onto of him. He kissed me on my forehead. Him: What's wrong?

Me: Just alot that's been happening.

Him: im sorry about what happened today. I really didn't want you to see that part of my life. I probably should be mad and cussing right now, but I'm not. I'm a fucken prostitute so for me to judge him and be mad at him, that would be really hypocritical of me..

Me: I'm not angry.

Him: Then what's wrong? Me:

i just have to go back home Him: Bokkie please not now..

Me: Why don't you want me to go?

Him: Because i need you here with me. What do I have to do for your parents to let you go, am i supposed to marry you? If so then I'll do it!

I wish i could tell Carl about who i am but it's not that easy. I love him Yes but I'm scared that if i tell him about me being a prostitute he is going to ditch Me like Chris... Me: i have other priorities and responsibilities Him: Such as?

Me: My job

Him: I'll pay you 10times what they paying you right now. I got off him..

Me: Its not about the money Him:

Then what is about?

Me: i am committed to my job, so I have to be loyal. Him:

What exactly is it, that you do?

Me: i am not oblige to tell, same way that you not oblige to tell me about what you doing. Him: So we gonna have secrets?

Me: You started them

Him: i told you what i do, I'm an Architect

Me: What i saw today doesn't spell Architect.

Him: You know alot about me, but i know nothing about you!

Me: Ask no questions and hear no lies..

Him: Its almost as if like you don't want me to know anything about you!

Me: Did i literally say that?

He got up from the bed and looked at me.. Him: i think this conversation really ends here

Me: Fine

Him: Cool!

He stood up and went to the bathroom, to take a shower.....

I changed into my pjs, i was too tired to shower so i just slept.....

..

I woke up the following morning, Carl wasn't around. He didn't even leave me a note or anything that he is going somewhere.....

I bathe then put on leggings and a t-shirt with sleepers. I went and made myself breakfast.....

.

.

KRESI

Tshepi hasn't called me or bothered to check up on me since the last time we had sex..

I found that highly not okay, i mean fine I'm a prostitute I'm supposed to sleep with niggas without no strings attached, but with Tshepiso it was different. I felt the connection between us the moment we laid eyes on each other...

I don't know why i love him soo much, but then we cannot understand Cupid..

I had Googled were he worked and i got the numbers and physical address. He was the CEO of the Thobekgale Pharmaceutical company, which was worth millions. I called his office and they told me that he is in a meeting which might take a couple of hours, but if i leave my name and number they will give it to him, but i know that his pride won't let him call me back.....

I tried forgetting about the fact that he did a hit and run on me

(One night stand) but my heart didn't wanna let me forget.
That is when i decided to go to his workplace. I needed
answers, i need to know were he stands with me like for real so
i can move on...

Richardson was my main man, he had no complaints of driving
me to Tshepiso's workplace.....

The building was very tall and beautiful...

I walked in, and the securities made me sign the visitor's
book.... They also gave me a card, written "visitor".....

I walked up to the entrance and oh my my my, it was almost as if like i was in another planet. I could tell this company has alot of money. I was turning around and admiring it....

I walked up to the receptionist..

Her: Good morning Mam“ can i help you?

Me: i need to see your boss, Tshepiso Thobekgale. She was on the computer..

Her: Did you make an appointment to come and see him? Me: uhm no..

Her: I“m sorry mam“ i can“t help you, you need to make an appointment to see Mr Thobekgale, you cannot just walk in and demand to see him. He is a very busy man.. And what are you, his wife?

Me: Fine, can i use your bathroom?

Her: Just go to the Elevator, it“s on the first floor. But every floor has a bathroom so first floor is convenient for you, so that you do not get lost.. Me: Thank you..

I walked up to the elevator, and noticed that Their building ends on the 7th floor.... Now i need to find Tshepiso“s office....

It took a bit of some time, going though all those floors but i finally found it, it was on the 6th floor...

His name was encrypted in Gold at the door.. “Mr T.

Thobekgale” underneath his initials and surname was the title “CEO”..... The was a receptionist there too.. Her: Excuse me can i help you?

Me: I“m looking for Mr Thobekgale

Her: Can i please have your appointment Card? Me: Is he around or not?

Her: Your appointment Card?

Me: i don“t have one! Is he here or not? Or should i walk into his office?

Her: How did you get up here without the appointment Card? Plus Mr Thobekgale has back to back meetings today. His in the boardroom with a very important client..

I had passed the boardroom on my way to his office... I started walking to the boardroom..

Her: Mam^{^^} you cannot walk up in there..

I busted in there. And indeed he was in a meeting. He was sitting down, while someone was busy doing a presentation... I looked at him.

Me: Can we talk?

He was wearing a suit this time around, shame he looked more cute in that..His receptionist walked in after me..

Her: Sorry Mr Thobekgale i tried to stop her.. Should I call security?Tpee: Its fine Rhonda I'll take it from here..

She walked out..

Me: So you just gonna sleep with me then ignore me??

He stood up and looked at his client... Him:

Please excuse me..

He grabbed me by my arm and Walked out with me to his office.. Me: Stop pushing me i have legs!!

We got there and he closed the door. He gave me a death stare, i was starting to get scared... He came closer with his Hands in his pockets.

I stood there not moving, i didn't wanna show him any signs of fear.. Out of nowhere he slapped Mr across the face..

While i was still astonished by that, he pushed me and i hit his table then fell... Him: You doing the same shit that Nissi would do right now!!!

He crouched down and grabbed me by my weave, shit was painful i don't wanna lie.. Him: You like the replica of her! You Have the same personality as her, you talk like her and you act like her!!! You piss me off the Same way that she would piss me off!

I was all crying, hoping that he would let me go but he didn't...

He grabbed a statue of Buddha on his table, from how he was carrying it i could see that it was heavy!! Fuck his gonna smash my head with that!

Him: I don't know why you never listen to me Nissi!!

He was holding the statue up high, ready to drop it on my head.. Me: i am not Nissi!!! Tshepi it's me, Kresi!!

I was soo bloody scared that i literally pissed on myself, I mean who wouldn't I'm stood face to face with death.... Me: Its Kresi..

He looked like he was coming back to his senses.. He put the statue down, and punched the table. I swear this guy is a beast!!

He held on to the table, i could see the anger in him.. Him: Get out!!

I wasn't comprehending...

Him: i said get the fuck out!! (shouting)

He said that while clearing everything on his table by throwing it away on the floor.. I didn't waste time. I stood up with my knees weak, and my whole body Shaking and i ran out.... I got to the elevator and pressed it alot of times until it opened.. I got in and pressed the Ground floor button.. As the elevator closed i sank down crying, today I came face to face with death!!!

I had my hand covering my mouth.. Me:

Ohh my God!!

Those were the only words i managed to say...

PART 25 ANGEL: SAMMY'S HEART

March 31, 2016 [visionarywritings](http://visionarywritings.com)

SAMMY

I was sitting at the guest room, Kresi was in the shower. She looked very terrified when she came in.....

She got out of the shower, and i had borrowed her my clothes.

Me: Not long ago, yall were having crazy sex and then today he almost killed you! She sat next to me, with her body still wet.

Her: i saw a side of him that i never knew existed. You know what was more weird? Me: What?

Her: She kept on calling me Nissi..

Me: That is strange... I just think you should stay away from this guy.. Her: I think so too.. I'm done with him.....

The was nothing much to do. We were bored for the test of the day. We watched movies, we slept and woke up that's how our day went...

Carl walked in at around 18:00 he was with Jeany. I was soo happy to see her I went and hugged her..

Me: Its good to see you..

She had shaved her hair, she was now bald... Me:

You looking good, you making progress..

Carl: She is. That is why the doctor decided to release her..

Jean: Can i get pizza

Carl: go and Wear your jacket then we'll go get pizza..

She walked upstairs... Things between me and Carl were a bit off, especially since i told him that I'm leaving.

Him: i thought that you'll be gone by now...

Me: since you told me that you fetching Jeany i thought that i should stay for a couple of days...

Him: You don't have to do us any favours Me: I'm not doing you any favours

Carl: She gets emotionally attached to people very easily. What if she gets attached to you, then you have to leave, what then? I kept quiet..

Him: i thought as much..

He walked away.. I really don't know why Carl is acting like

this just because i refuse to move in with him.. Kresi came down.

Her: I'm ready to go, thanks for the clothes.. Me: Wait for me

Her: You Coming along?

Me: Yes, and don't ask any questions..

She raised up her hands in form of "i surrender".....

I went up to the bedroom and got my things then looked for Carl to say goodbye to him. He was in Jeany's room...

Me: i just wanted to tell you that I'm leaving Him: Bye

Jeany: i thought you were gonna have pizza with us.. Me: some other time sweety.. Come and give me a big hug She came to hug me..

Me: I'll call you okay? Her: Okay..

I took my bag and Walked out to Kresi.....

We went and met up with Richardson in town.....

I was sitting in the car thinking to myself that maybe it's better this way...I mean Carl and i we not gonna work out. I'm a prostitute and his whatever what he is...

Although I was busy trying to convince myself that I'm okay with this, but deep down it was killing me and i was already missing him terribly....

..

We got to Friend-Segal and moghana wanted to have a word with us melody included.... I wonder what we did now.

We sat in the lounge.....

Her: You know that Peejay and Remooh made me money, alot of money than all of you combined. I am very happy with their commitment.

She walked around a bit..

Her: Do you girls even wanna be here?

No one said nothing. I mean that was just a Rhetorical question..

Her: i can see that you guys are undecided about your future here with me.....so if you guys want out its okay..

We looked at her, is she seriously letting us go? Her:

But..

I knew there's a but..

Her: But because of the fact that i have spent alot of money on you girls, especially you

Sammy. The only way that you gonna leave is if each one of

you pays me 10mill..if that`s to much, at least 5mill....
She was crazy! How we gonna get that kind of cash from
because the clients we get don`teven pay that much.

Her: since yall don't have that kind of money as yet, I suggest you get to work. And i have cut your payments instead of the 10 000 that you guys get a month, yall are now gonna get 5000..

Kresi: That's not fair..

Her: You guys weren't working, so what im doing right now I'm being generous.. And no more going out until i approve!
She walked away after saying that..

.
A week passed, Carl didn't even bother to call me and all that, but probably it's for the best... I have had only 2 clients this week but it seemed as if like they paid alot of money for me because moghana's mood had changed that she even allowed for us to go out... Later that day, melody, Kresi and myself decided to go to the lounge just forget about men and love. We really needed to concentrate on us and our commitment to moghana..

The club was a bit empty, nothing interesting was happening or maybe it's because it was during the week....

We got ourselves ciders as we were having a slow boring night..

Melody: I'm glad we went out, we really needed this break

Kresi: How many clients did you have?

Melody: Just one.. She looked at me.. Me: two

Her: i only had one..

Tpee and Carl walked in as we were sitting there enjoying ourselves, we had now ordered 4 cousins sweet Rose....

Melody: What are they doing here?

I saw Kresi getting a bit uncomfortable Me: Let's just go guys

Kresi: No we came here first, if people should go then it gotta be them..

Melody: Let's not allow them to ruin our night...

We tried our level best to avoid. They were sitting at their usual VIP section. After a while they spotted us, and came..

Me: Can't they just stay at their table...

Although they jerks but then we cannot deny the fact that they

make every Girl melt. Tpee looked at Kresi..

Him: Can i please have a word with you.. We looked at him

Tpee: in private

Me: Never!

He looked at me

Him: was i talking to you? Carl: Tpee

Tpee: No i..

Kresi: Its fine I'll have a word with you.. Me: Are you crazy?

Kresi: I'll be fine Sammy She stood up and they went.....

Carl looked at Melody.

Melody: I'll just go and seat by the bar...

She took her drink and went.. Carl sat next to me, i turned my chair so that my back could face him... Him: I'm sorry

Tears were at the verge of falling.

Him: i shouldn't have forced you to move in with me if you didn't want too.... The honest truth is that i do wanna live with him..

He moved his chair closer. Him:

i miss you alot.

I wish I could say i miss him too, but I'm just gonna let him sweat a bit..

.

.

KRESI

We were standing outside, with me against the wall. He was standing in front of me, with his hands inside his pockets and that hat, that always make him look more cute..

Him: I'm sorry about what happened the other day. I didn't say anything....

Him: See what i meant when I told you that I'm not the type of guy you wanna mess with?

Because that's how my love is. It hurts.. Me: You don't scare me..

I don't know where that came from, or why i said it but i had to say something..... He squeezed my cheek a bit giving me his side smile..

Him: You should be scared.. He then started walking away..

Me: i love you!!

He stopped and then looked at me..

Me: i don't care who you are or what you do but all I know is that i feel something for you and i feel a connection between us...

He walked up to me, my heart was beating way too fast... He put his hand around my waist and pulled me closer to him..

Him: i do feel something for you too..Me: Then what's stopping us?

Him: Because a life with me is dangerous. It always ends in death! Me:

Then so be it!

Him: at least I'll buy you an expensive casket I laughed..

Me: make sure i look good in it

Him: i promise..... How about a date?Me: I'd like that

He leaned over and kissed me..

PART 26 ANGEL: SAMMY'S HEART

March 31, 2016 [visionarywritings](#)

KRESI

I opened my eyes that morning with a huge smile on my face.. Yes i was sleeping in Tpee's bed wearing his T-shirt and boxers...

His sheets were pure white, I'm sure whoever does the laundry makes sure not to even miss a stain....

His bed was a bit high and Hella comfortable. His pillows the way they supported my neck though eish...

Tpee's house was very beautiful and looked very expensive..

I got out of bed and went to rinse my mouth and washed my face. I then went downstairs. He was in the kitchen preparing breakfast...

I hugged him From the back, while he was at the stove cooking...Me: Morning

Him: babe you are up, wanted to surprise you with breakfast in bed. Me: Then you late..

I went and sat down on his high chair.....

Me: Your chairs are very high i hope i don't fall. He chuckled...

Me: What are you making?

Him: The meal i asked you to make for me and you couldn't

Me: i couldn't because it was too fancy and complicated..

Him: i was raised fancy, and that's why I'm complicated..

He started dishing up for me, then put the plate in front of me...

Me: looks yummy

Him: And tastes yummy

He took a fork and started feeding me while wiping my lips...

Him: And?

Me: It tastes very nice

Him: Don't be too black start eating like this..

He took the fork again to feed me, but this time around he just played with it around my mouth while not putting it inside my mouth...

I was getting very irritated. He laughed and kissed me then put the fork inside my mouth....

Me: Ain't you gonna eat? Him: It has cheddar Me: So?

Him: I'm lactose intolerant..

I didn't really know what that meant but i know it has to do with cheese... Him: Finish up, we have to go somewhere Me: Where?

Him: You'll see

Me: Well i don't have an underwear to wear

He kissed me on my forehead while tickling Me on my waist..

Him: Then don't wear any underwear

Me: Wouldn't you like that?

He laughed and Walked upstairs, while i finished eating my breakfast.. Underneath it all Tshepi was a sweet person.....

.
. .

SAMMY

I had promise Jeany that me and her we gonna do some shopping and spend this whole day together..

Moghana was not around, she was running errands so that was my queue to leave.....

I met up with Jeany and Carl at the mall, and Carl was looking fine as always... I went up to Jeany and hugged her while kissing her on her cheek... Me:

Hey sweety how are you? Her: I'm fine thanks

Me: Are you ready to do some shopping? Her:

Yes..

Me: Okay let's go..

Carl looked at me

Him: Hello Carl how are you? I'm fine Sammy thanks for asking.. Me: I'm here for Jeany not you..

Out of nowhere he pulled Me closer and kissed me. I wanted to resist but i missed him, i miss how he touches me..

He had his hands around my waist and his forehead against mine, with his hand trying to force it's way inside my short and i was busy trying to stop him...

Him: i just wanna fuck you right now... Me: Don't be crazy it's...i...

Mind you we were in a public place with him finally got her hand inside my shorts....he put

his two fingers right in my hole.. Me: Caaaaarl...

He was finger fucking me in public right in front of Jeany, Carl was insane!!!!!!!!!!

.

. #KRESI

We drove up to the cemetery, i didn't know who we were visiting but i was not gonna ask any questions.....

We got out of the car with him holding my hand, and we walked up into this grave that had a beautiful marble Tombstone head. I could tell it was expensive...

The words written there were "NISSI SIBIYA" the tombstone head had her picture, she was smiling and looked very beautiful.

Tshepi crouched down, her grave had roses all over.

Tshepi: Hey nini, sorry i haven't been coming, I've been very busy.. He looked at me.

Him: i wanna tell you about someone knew in my life. Her name is Kresi and we've been seeing each other.....

Me moving on doesn't mean that I'll forget about you or stop loving you. You will always hold a special place in my heart. Bit the honest truth is that i cannot keep on loving and holding on to a dead person...

I mean wouldn't you want me to move on and be happy?!

Shame i could see that this person really meant a lot to

Tshepi...

After that heart warming speech we moved on to another grave, this one it was “RASHEEDA THOBEKGALE” i bet it’s his mom because looking at her pic, she looked like Tshepi just that she was Indian...

Him: Vic has not been the same ever since you left us, especially in that tragic way.. This people must really mean alot to him..

We moved on to another one, this was DORA and apparently she was their maid..... After all that we went back to the car, i didn't wanna ask anything he just needs this time alone i will ask questions later..

. #SAMMY

After all that finger fucking etc, Carl left giving me his platinum card and told me to call him when we done..

I decided that we should go to Milky Lane get some waffles to brighten our day... We got there and got milkshakes with waffles.. The waitress was very nice to Jeany Waitress: Hello you cute thing Jeany smiled at her..

Waitress: Would you like an ice cream? It's in the house Jeany: No thank you

Waitress: Why what's wrong?

Her: im not allowed to eat Ice cream because I'm dying, i have cancer of the Lumia.. She went back to sipping her milkshake without any problems...

The waitress just looked at me in shock and all i could do was just shrug my shoulders... She went away. I looked at Jeany..

Me: Sweety you cannot tell people that you are dying Her: Why not?

Me: Its not a good thing to say Her:

Okay, can i use the toilet? Me: Go on sweety..

I didn't feel the need to accompany her because the rest room was just looking at us.....

I stood up and went to get me some ice cream then sat down...

It was now 30min Jeany was still not out that i went to check up on her... The rest room was empty no sign of Jeany i freaked out, i mean what am i gonna tell Carl...

As i was About to go out of the toilet i felt some holding me tight and putting a cloth over my mouth and nose..

Voice: just inhale it deeply

I had no choice because u needed to breath so i started inhaling. Whatever chemical it was, it was very strong...

Voice: Sweet dreams cup cake

The male voice said that while he also kissed me on my head..
I was slowly but surely blacking out..

PART 28 ANGEL: SAMMY'S HEART

April 3, 2016 [visionarywritings](#)

What was this guy saying to me right now..

Him: You are dating one of the smartest guys i know. Carl is very skilled at what he does, he can just walk up into any bank and look around for 10min after that he knows how his gonna Rob the bank without getting caught....

Me: You make that sound as if like it's a good thing. His breaking the law Him: Either way his good..and i know that he can lead me into Riley's diamonds. Me: Why would you wanna steal from your own brother?

Him: Because i need the money... I am broke and my wife is stuck in a mental institution. I can't afford her treatment anymore or her stay there.. So I need to get her out, the only way i can do that is if i get her the best psychiatrist from London to give a different diagnosis because the ones from here are not doing a good job.. Shame the was pain in the tone of his voice..

Me: i understand your situation, but still it shouldn't be a motive for you to steal what doesn't belong to you..

Him: Riley is not a saint, he stole those diamonds in kimberley with the help of your Boyfriend

Me: But still...

He looked at his wrist watch..Him: Time to give Carl a call He then looked at me and started undressing..Me: What are you doing?

Him: We gonna call him from a pay phone not far from here. I need to scare you a bit so that if you try anything you'll know that I'll kill you! What was he gonna do? Rape me?

I couldn't look at him completely naked it just wasn't right...

What i saw next shocked Me to a point where I thought that i was gonna get a heart attack... This guy had changed into a big black lion with wings.. I have never seen such in my life i was screaming and trying to get away from this beast but i backwards with the chair.. He came closer and roared, my heart was beating very fast.

He changed back into his normal self then started dressing up, i was still down there.. What the fuck did Carl get me into???

He lifted the chair up, his presence made me shiver..... He whispered in my ear..

Him: i hope we understand each other... I nodded my head...

He untied me, i stood up stretching myself. He went and opened the door and Jeany was

brought in.. Me: Jeany!!!

She ran to me and i picked her up. She was crying and looked scared Jeany: Let`s go home i wanna go home (crying)

Me: We'll go home sweetheart, Carl is gonna come and get us..I hope he will..

Taylor: Okay it's time to go..

He led us out into a car. This was indeed a cabin in the woods, and it was very small...

We got into the car and drove away, Jeany was sitting ontop of me and she was burning up....Me: Are you alright sweetheart?

Her: i don't feel good

She probably needs her meds.. I was very angry at Carl how could he put our lives in dangerlike this, especially Jeany because she's sick...

We finally got to the phone and Walked up to it... Mr Duvenhage dialled his numberHim: i hope he answers...

I don't know how to pray but i was silently praying for Carl to answer..

Duvenhage: Hey Carl, it's Duvenhage here..... When are you bringing me the house plan?He looked at me..

Him: Maybe this will encourage you to speed up the process....

I took the phone and put it on my ear tears were streaming down..Me: Carl..

Him: Sammy is that you?? Were is Jeany are you alright?? Me: Carl give this man what he wants before he kills us!

He laughed but it was more of a pissed of laugh...Him: I'm gonna kill Duvenhage!!

Me: listen to me, his dangerous he turned into a lion..

Carl: He doesn't know who his m..

Me: Carl stop being stubborn! Jeany is even burning up she needs her meds...I put the phone next to Jeany's ear..

Me: Its Carl baby..

Jeany: Carl i wanna come home.....okay i don't feel good...

Duvenhage took the phone and put it back..

Jeany: i wanna vomit

I put her down and she vomited.. Duvenhage: What's wrong with her? Me: She has cancer, she needs her meds

Duvenhage: Then i hope Carl makes it snappy!..Let's go We got back into the car and drove away..

.

.

KRESI

Tshepi and i were in the house now, preparing dinner. I really like this side of him.. I was peeling carrots and he was hugging me from the back while planting light kisses on my neck...

Me: Stop it I'm trying to cook..

Him: You still not wearing any underwear?

He said that with his hand making it inside my jeans.. Me: You are soo naughty....

We were interrupted by the bell.. Me:

Expecting anyone?

Him: No so whoever that Is let's ignore them!! The person wasn't going away..

Me: Let me go and open...

I went to open and it was Carl, he looked like a wreck like he had been crying... He pushed me out the way and got inside....

Carl: I'm gonna kill him!!! Tshepi: kill who?

Carl: I'm gonna fucken kill him!.. Tshepi: Calm down!

Tshepi sat him down...

Tshepi: Talk to me man what's wrong? Tears fell from Carl..

Him: Duvenhage kidnapped Jeany and Sammy.. Tshepi: Wtf!!

I got closer to them

Me: Sammy got what??? Tshepi: What's his price?!

Carl: He wants a plan on Riley's house. He wants to steal Riley's diamonds.. Tshepi: You can do that can't you?

Him: i can't betray Riley, you know loyalty runs deep in the bloods..

Me: What? Excuse me it's my friend we talking about here and you telling me about Loyalty??

Tshepi gave me a hand, indicating i should hold up..

Carl: And Jeany has started getting sick what if she..... I'll never forgive myself! I'm sure Sammy hates me right now..

Tshepi: I say give him the plan Carl: What if Riley Smokes me??

Tshepi: He won't smoke you

Carl: We talking about Diamonds worth 23mill

Tshepi: Look Riley and the bloods they need you more than you need them.. No Matter how much you Betray him he will never smoke you! You the man with a plan.. Or you have any other alternative?

Him: Yeah let's smoke Duvenhage Tshepi laughed...

Carl looked serious about what he was saying

Tshepi: Gesh is still recovering, you don't know how to use a gun. I will be the only man who has to go up against Duvenhage and that guy is more dangerous than Riley..

Carl: I'll learn how to use a gun

Tshepi: That will take a while, Jeany will be dead by then.. You don't have a choice G, you need to give him the plan..

PART 29 ANGEL: SAMMY'S HEART

April 3, 2016 [visionarywritings](#)

We were back at the cabin, Jeany was seriously burning up. At least Mr Duvenhage had organised some water and towel for me. She was sweating very badly and was also weak i think it's from all that vomiting she's been doing....

I wish Carl can see how much his reckless life is affecting her sister..

Duvenhage came in he had a bottle of Panado syrup with him. He handed it to me, and i just looked at him..

Him: i heard panado is good when it comes to fever, especially for children.

Me: How do i know that it hasn't been tampered with? Him: the cap is still sealed..

Me: i still don't trust you

Him: Then let her burn to death.. He sat down on the chair..

Me: Can i contact Carl again?

Him: We'll have to go to the pay phone again Me: i don't know why his taking long

Him: Because his stubborn. Carl allows his Anger to rule him than his logical thinking..

Me: Why can't you just go to Riley's house?

Him: Because it's dangerous for Me to go alone Me:

You a lion with wings, everyone would be scared.

Him: But not my brother. Going there I'll be walking right into my death, yes I'm a lion but a few Bullets will take me out.

And knowing my brother his very good with the sniper Me: kill him before he kills you

Him: Its not that easy. To kill my kind i just need one bullet in my heart then I'm gone.

Riley has a group so going up again all of them would be dangerous.... Me: You guys sound like sworn enemies

Him: We are. I'm a lion and he doesn't have a heart. Me: But he has a very beautiful wife! Him:

And so do i..

Me: How did you get that Right? I mean i wouldn't marry a lion.. Does she even know you a lion?

Him: Yes..

Me: And she still married you? He chuckled

Him: She did and she loved me through all of that.. Me: Yooh!

The door opened.. Some guy walked in.. Him: His here

Duvenhage stood up.. Duvenhage: His here alone? Him: Yes sir!

Duvenhage: show him in.. He then looked at me

Duvenhage: your Boyfriend is here

That was a relief... After a while he walked in i wanted to Stand up and go to hug him but i stopped myself..

Duvenhage: Its about time!

He put his back pack on the table, then walked up to

Duvenhage and started punching him. I was sitting there thinking to myself what the hell Is Carl doing. One of the men who work for Duvenhage went to hold him..

Carl: Don't fucken touch me bro!!

Duvenhage was bleeding from his nose, he took a towel and wiped the blood..

Duvenhage: Calm the fuck down! You still need to take your sister to the doctor she ain't got much time..

He took out the plan and laid it on the table and started explaining to Duvenhage.. Carl was good at this the way he planned everything it was just soo smoothly...

Duvenhage: Nice work man! I hope you have given me the right plan because if it's wrong those girls right there are going to pay for your mistakes!!

Carl: Can we go?

Duvenhage looked at his man. Duvenhage: Escort them..
Carl came he attempted to pick up Jeany but i slightly pushed
him off.. Me: i got her.

I picked Jeany up and we went to his car, he had come with his Range.... I sat with her at the back she was still burning up....

..

We got to the hospital and they immediately attended her, Carl even forced me to get a checkup just to be sure that I'm not hurt...

The doctor confirmed that I'm fine then we went to sit at the waiting Area.. I was just too tired that's all..

The Doctor came to us after a while and told us that they'll have to keep Jeany for a week for some thorough observation....

..

We went back to the car and drove away home.....

When we got home, i got out of the car and went straight inside the house. He was following me and I got to the bedroom, shut the door at him and locked it.....

I am very Angry at Carl he put us in danger, Jeany almost died!! I was standing against the door crying...

Him: im Ca... I'm very sorry about what happened

I didn't say anything..

Him: if you mad at me or hate me it's okay i understand.. I wish I could hate him..

Him: the thought of losing you and Jeany really hit home.. I love you Sammy and I'm truly sorry... I'm just gonna sit here until you open..

He was quiet, i think he was really sitting at the door...

Sometimes when you love someone soo much you really can't stay mad at them for that long...

I went to take a long bath, i just needed to relax..

I got out and wiped myself then put on his lotion which made my heart to melt more and forgive him

I put on his basket ball T-shirt and went to open the door.

Shame he was sitting there with his phone..

He stood up and put his phone away... He was ashamed he

didn't know what to say.. Me: i thought that i was Never gonna see you again..

Him: i wasn't gonna let anything happen to you.. Me: So you betrayed Riley to save my life?

Him: Yes.. And I'd do it again Me: i mean that much to you?

Him: You mean that much to me and Jeany..

No one has ever done something like this for me.. I smiled at him, he smiled back

Him: i love you Me:

i love you too..

He came closer and kissed me...

.

..

Time passed and Jeany was recovering very well, what happened made my relationship with Kyle to grow stronger....

Today i was going on a cruise ship with my girls, yes Carl got us a cruise ship to go enjoy

ourselves for a week to Mozambique islands, but we wasn't gonna get off the ship... I had invited all the girls including Peejay and Reemoh....

Carl has money because this cruise was big and beautiful it had everything!!! Inside. The

girls were just losing their minds and screaming...

Peejay: Omg Angel this is off the hizzay!! The pimp you got is truly rich!! Me: He is kinda rich!

I didn't tell Peejay and Remooh about Carl i didn't want them ruining things for me like they did with Chris..

Reemoh: Let's go get drinks!

They went to get drinks. We had a bar and bartender. We had waitresses and chefs we just had everything...

Kresi: This looks like it has cost Carl alot of money

Melody: Ya phela this cruise ship looks like the one on Friends

like this.. Kresi: Now I just wish that I was the one who was kidnapped!

We all laughed..

Melody: Are we moving yet? Me: I'm not quite sure..

As we were still admiring the cruise ship, i couldn't believe who walked in.. It was Anathi, Nokhanya, and they were with another woman i didn't know..

They looked sexy as hell! Anathi was wearing a white jumpsuit with a gold belt and gold

heels. Nokhanya was wearing a short black jumpsuit with black heels and a long black shirt that reached her knees. The jumpsuit was really short though...

The other woman was wearing a black jumpsuit also but hers was long and black heels. They all had gold belts and shades with their weaves tied as ponytails but the other woman had box braids..

They looked fab i don't wanna lie.. Anathi took off her shades.
Anathi: Here we are Siba you said you needed a vacation. Ohh the other woman her name is Siba

Her: i need to rest I'm tired

Nokhanya: We must share a room i don't trust this Prostitutes!!

Anathi: Same here, it's bad enough that we have to share the ship with them.. Let's go choose a room for ourselves

They took their luggage bags and went....

Kresi was pissed she tried following them to kick Ass but i stopped her

Me: We don't know this people that well so let's be calm

Kresi: Calm my left foot!! Who do they think they are!!! My phone rang, it was Carl

Me: Melody make sure that you calm Kresi before she commits murder I walked away and answered my phone

Him: Bokkie

Me: Why didn't you tell me that we gonna share the ship with Anathi and her crew.. Carl: What?

Me: Yes! And Kresi wants to kick Ass Carl: Whoa!! tell your home girl to chill

Me: How can she chill when they are insulting us??

Carl: I'll call Riley but please baby stay away from Anathi..

Tell your home girls also Because Anathi is a blood she was trained to kill she's dangerous stay away from her Me: Okay

Him: Let me call Riley

Me: Okay i love you Him: i love you too

I hunged up.. Melody came to me Melody: Kresi went to them

Me:

What??!

Melody: She went to give them a piece of her mind.. Ohhh shit!!!

PART 30 ANGEL: SAMMY'S HEART

April 3, 2016 [visionarywritings](#)

We went and looked for Kresi, luckily she was at the kitchen trying to calm down.. Me: Calm down babe

Her: i just don't understand why they would come up in here and Treat us like that! If they soo much better than us then Why are they here? Couldn't they get another cruise ship?? Melody:

We not here for them, so we'll just have to ignore them..

Sammy: Melody is right, can you try that Kresi? Plus Carl told me that this Anathi chick is

dangerous. She's been trained to kill!

Me: ive lived my life on the streets for many years, she doesn't scare me

Melody: Just calm down babe

She said that while rubbing me on my back..

Me: Let's just go there and join Remooh and Peejay, because honestly we here to have fun! Me: Yall go i still wanna go to the bathroom

Sammy: I'll come with you

Melody: You'll find Me at the bar.

Melody walked away, and we walked to the bathroom.. We passed by the Queens Room the door was half opened and it sounded like they were having a pretty interesting conversation that we eavesdropped...

Nokhanya: So you actually went out with the Arrogant Tpee?

Anathi: Yeap and we fucked!

Nokhanya and Siba started making unnecessary noise

Nokhanya: and how was the experience?

Anathi: it was wow!! That guy knows his story Hey.. I'm just disappointed that he would go for a prostitute. Word is out that his dating one of the prostitutes!

Nokhanya: Yaa that's not like Tpee

Siba: He was fine with Nissi this other bitches are

unnecessary!! Nokhanya: But be proud one of the prostitutes Is dating your ex They laughed...

Anathi: if i didn't love Riley soo much and If he didn't hitch me i would've probably married Tpee..

Kresi couldn't take it anymore she walked away all upset..

.
. .
.

KRESI

I was sitting in my room crying i was very heartbroken. How is my relationship with Tpee gonna work with all this people thinking I'm not good enough for him? And worse he had Fucked your Highness Anathi how do i beat that?? I'm just a prostitute. I took my phone and called him..

Him: i thought you'd be having the time of your life with your friends? I was truly hurt i couldn't stop crying..

Him: Who did what?

Me: Why didn't you tell me about your highness Anathi

(Sniffing) Him: What are you talking about?

Me: Anathi is here with her crew Talking about how yall dated and how much you fucked her, you know Tpee I'm tired if I'm not competing with your dead ex I'm not good enough for you(crying)

Him: Who said all of that?

Me: Anathi is rubbing it on my face

The tone of his voice changed he sounded highly pissed..

Him: Who the fuck does Anathi think she is saying shit like that?? Me and her never dated i just fucked that bitch once!

Me: And that's suppose to make me feel better?.. You know I think we need a break Him: just because Anathi said some shit that's not true?? What am i supposed to do now?

Come and stop the fucken cruise ship to deal with that bitch!!! is that gonna make you feel better?

Tshepi and i we haven't been dating for that long, but our love runs deep as if like we've known each other for a long time..

Me: i need a break

Him: Don't fucken piss me off Kitty!

That's the pet name he has given me because he always says that my body is soft like a kitten..

Tshepi: Don't make me come down there, because i will and you won't like it! He spoke with soo much authority i couldn't answer

Him: Either you enjoy your mini vacation with your home girls or you come back home!

The second option sounds better, but my girls need me. Him: Bye and i fucken love you!

Me: Bye

Him: i said i love you! Me: i love you too

He hunged up.. I really don't know how I'm gonna deal with your highness Anathi... Sammy came into my room..

Sammy: Hey are you okay? Me: I'll be fine

She came and sat down next to me..

Me: i called Tshepi Sammy: What did he say?

Me: His denying that him and Anathi dated, he only said that he fucked her.. Sammy: Can't you take his word??

Me: i don't know

Sammy: i doubt Tshepi would lie you, I think Anathi is just trying to start some shit Me: probably

Her: Let's go the girls are waiting..

We walked out and went to the lounge, we were served cocktails..

We chatted and laughed just having a good time until the Madams came! The other one looked like she had been crying and she looked angry too. She approached us Her: which one of you bitches is Melody?? We kept quiet..

Her: I'm not gonna repeat myself! Melody: I'm melody
Her voice was breaking i know she's scared because melody is
scared of fighting..

Her: So you the prostitute that's been fucking my man huh?
This is not gonna go down very well..

Her: I'm Nokhanya! I'm his wife! We fucken have a son
together! And I'm fostering his daughter too!!

Melody was really scared

Melody: I'm really sorry i didn't know! Nokhanya was upset
and crying..

She moved away from us, the other friend went to her not
Anathi..

Nokhanya: Siba angisamfuni u Gesh (i don't want Gesh
anymore) She hugged her..

Siba: i know Baby it's Okay

Nokhanya: Why must he always hurt me like this??

Ya this girl can cry shame, that i was starting to feel something
too.. Anathi looked at melody

Anathi: But how didn't you know that he has a wife and kids??

Melody didn't say anything

Anathi: You are a disgrace!! Can you see how much she's in
pain? You caused her that
pain!! Melody was starting to tear up..

Anathi: Don't cry, you don't deserve to cry!!!

Me: Maybe If she chained her Dog none of this would've
happened.. She looked at me..

Her: Excuse me?

Me: You act like my home girl here approached that male bitch
Gesh!!

I could see that she was boiling in anger.... Sammy: Kresi.. I
stood up

Me: No I'm just tired of this bitches acting all Royal! Anathi:
You better sit the fuck down!

Me: or what huh??

She smiled and looked down... Then out of nowhere this bad
bitch literally jumped on me and we fell with her ontop of me

and she was punching me repeatedly on my face.. I could taste my own blood!! Them bitches tried getting her off but Ya she was too strong for them, and i couldn't defend myself because she had pinned my arms against the floor locking them with her knees.... This bitch was on a mission to kill me!

PART 31 ANGEL: SAMMY'S HEART

April 3, 2016 [visionarywritings](#)

Insert31

....

SAMMY

It took a whole of people to get Anathi off Kresi, i have never seen a bitch this mad.. I quickly went to help Kresi get up, her face was bloody but Thank God we have a GP onboard for such incidents. I walked her to her room and waited for the GP to come... I think more damage was done to her nose and lower lip.

She couldn't even talk properly...

The doctor got In and asked me to get a basin with warm water and a towel, i did just that.... The Doctor put on her latex gloves and Wiped the blood from Kresi's face..... He then suggested we go to the surgery room, i never knew a cruise ship could have one... The doctor stitched her lower lip and put on something to support her nosebridge as it was broken... She let her drink mybullen Syrup for pain then we took her back to her bedroom... Me: i can't believe Anathi can be this Downlow!

Kresi was mostly tearing up.....

I laid with her on the bed until the Mybullen kicked in and she went straight to lala-land..... I then decided to go and join my bitches. Them Anathis were sitting at the bar drinking im sure she's really proud of herself!

Me: She must be proud of herself! Peejay:

What are they doing here?

Me: i don't know... Melody:

Are we still moving? Me: imnot sure!

While we sitting there, the boys got in.... Haibo what are they doing here?? It was Carl, Gesh, And Carl..

Nokhanya stood up and Walked away, Gesh followed her.. Carl and Tpee came to us.. Carl kissed me on my cheek.. Me: What are yall doing here?

Carl: Tpee dragged us here! Tpee: Were is Kresi?

I looked down..

Tpee: Sammy were is Kresi?? Me: i.. Let me rather show you..

I stood up and he followed me, we passed Anathi sitting there she looked like she was expecting Tpee to notice her or even say something to her but Tpee passed her like she don't exist....

We got into Sammy's Room she was sleeping there peacefully...

As soon as Tpee saw her, his face changed and Kresi was still wearing the t-shirt with blood.. Tpee: Who did that?

Me: Anathi!

Tpee looked at Kresi for a long time you could clearly see that his boiling inside.. He then walked out i followed him.. We got to the lounge and i was signalling to Carl to attend

Tpee...

He grabbed Anathi by her weave.. Carl: G what are you doing?

Anathi: Tpee what are you doing??!

She literally wiped the floor with her behind by dragging her across the floor.. Anathi: Siba call Riley!!

Siba stood up and got her phone out..

Carl and i followed Tpee, we got outside at the edge looked like a porch or something, he

literally threw Anathi off the boat. I've seen crazy people before but Tpee topped the list.....I looked at Anathi as the boat went and i noticed that we were no longer going to Mozambique islands but we were heading back to our starting point....

We went back inside, and he went to Kresi's bedroom.. Me: Wow! That was epic!

He literally left me all shocked..

Carl: go get your things the trip has been cut short! Me: What about my home girls?

Him: I'll arrange for them to be taken back... Me: Okay.....

.
. .

KRESI

I woke up in Tshepi's bed, i remember him waking me up

while we were in the cruise ship, but how i really got here i don't remember because i was sleeping half of the time. This Mybullen thing that the doctor gave me was ass kicking!! I got out of bed and looked myself in the mirror, eish i still look fucked up....

I slowly and Gently washed my face. Brushing my teeth was another story because of my almost torn apart lower lip that was stitched. It was a bit painful though..

After what seemed to be forever i went out to the kitchen. Something was smelling very good.

I saw some woman she was wearing a Sarie and alot of Gold jewellery. She was Indian and looked very beautiful with that long soft hair... She spotted and me smiled.. Her: You must be Kresi??

I nodded my head yes...

Her: I'm Moodley Tshepi's Aunt.. Me: Ohw hi...

This was an awkward moment... Me:

Where is Tshepi?

He is in the study I think he has a visitor... Come sit down I've made some pepper steak pie..I smiled

Me: I'll be right back..

I quickly ran to look for Tshepi, i busted in on him talking with some white guy it seemed like they were having a serious conversation...

The man had a blue Bandana around his wrist..

Tpee: I'll think about it Duvenhage and get back to you.. Him: I'll be waiting

He gave him a handshake and this Duvenhage guy went..

Tshepi picked me up and put me

ontop of his table, he tried to kiss me but stopped.. Him: i think we should wait for your lip to heal.. He kissed me on my forehead.. Me:

Who was that?

Him: It was...

He put his hand on his stomach.. Me:

Are you okay?

Him: i feel nauseated... I also feel like I wanna vomit.

Probably it's the pepper steak pie..I put my hand on his forehead

Me: Well you don't have a fever

Him: I'm not sick I'm just nauseated that's all.. Me: drink cold water, i heard it helps

Him: Let's go then..

He picked me up and we walked out to the kitchen..

.

. #SAMMY

Carl and i we were making pancakes. Carl was standing behind me while I was at the stove and he was busy kissing me on my neck..

Me: Stop because i can't concentrate on what im doing and Jeany is gonna wake up now now wanting her pancakes

Him: Well Jeany will just have to take a number..

I laughed.... The door bell rang as we were still at it. Him:

Who is that at this Ungodly hour?? Me: i have no idea

Carl went to open and it was Gesh... Carl:

What brings you hear so early?

Gesh walked in while starring at me..

Gesh: i see you guys were about to have breakfast

Carl: We were just making Jeany some pancakes.. You still haven't answered me? Gesh: i am here to save you from a she devil! I started getting a bit nervous.. Carl looked at him confused

Gesh: Sammy don't you have clients to attend too? Me: Wa??.. Clients???

I was feeling the heat...

Carl: What are you talking about?

Gesh: Nokhanya and her girls ran a background check on this bitches and something amazing came up... They prostitutes and porn stars!!

Carl laughed...

Carl: Now that's a lame joke G..

Gesh took out his phone and started pressing it then gave it to Carl. From the sounds i knew that it was my sex tape...

Carl put Gesh's phone on the table, he didn't look happy.. Carl: You are.....

He was pacing up and down..

Me: Gesh you had no ride

Gesh: i had every right! You and your home girls played us, you took us for a ride!! How much money were you hoping to get from us??

Me: i love Ca..

Carl just approached me and i moved back..

Him: Don't fucken talk about love!!!! If Gesh didn't tell me were you gonna tell me? Me: Ofcause i was gonna tell you!

Him: When?? When we have 3 kids? You fucken unbelievable!!

Me: i don't understand why you mad because you also didn't

tell me the truth about who you are!!

He slapped me across the face.. Gesh held him back

Gesh: She's not worth it man, imagine going to jail for a fucken prostitute! Me: I'll take my things and go

Carl: That's the only best thing you've said so far!!! Take your shit and leave my fuckenhouse!!

Can you believe that I allowed that bitch to be close to my sister?!...

I walked upstairs remembering the day Chris threw me out after finding out I'm a prostitute, abs history is repeating itself

PART 32 ANGEL: SAMMY'S HEART

April 5, 2016 [visionarywritings](#)

SAMMY

I back at Moghana's house, she must be very happy because this time around I'm probably not going anywhere anymore....

Her: Well, well, well i was about to send a search party for you..Me: no need..

Peejay: Did Carl dump you? I looked at her

Reemoh: wow he finally found out that you a prostitute!

Moghana: Who Carl?

Reemoh: Her boyfriend

Moghana: Sammy i thought you'll be done with this dating nonsense My tears failed me....

She hugged me....

Her: Let's go upstairs and talk We went upstairs to my bedroom..

Her: You need to stop hurting yourself life this dear....do you even know why i drink this much?

Me: Why?

Her: Because i once loved someone soo much. I gave that person my all but after they found out that i was a pornstar they left. Even today i still cannot get over that..

Me: I'm sorry

Her: All im saying is that, this is your life embrace it.. Live it however you want too dear

forget love! That thing will damage you it will break you inside... Me: You probably right..

Her: i know i am..

She kissed me on my cheek and Walked out..

Moghana was right, from now on I`m not gonna chase after love and what not, I`m just gonna enjoy my life I`m gonna be carefree.....

..

A full week passed, no call or messages from Carl but i didn't care anymore i mean, I'm living carefree now..

It was 9am on a Monday morning and i was in the kitchen pouring myself some whiskey. I sleep and wake up on that now, Alcohol has been my life now!

Peejay walked in... Her: Morning

Me: Hey

She made herself some cereal

Her: Isn't it a bit early for that? Me: Whose monitoring?

Her: Does this have anything to do with Carl? Me: No Peejay I'm just enjoying my life..

Peejay: Look Angel...

Me: No you look!! I am accepting reality and reality is that, this is my life Remooh! I am a prostitute!! I don't deserve to be loved! Peejay: You just hurt Sammy it's normal but..

Me: But nothing Peejay!

There was a knock at the door i went to open. Thula was standing at the door with flowers.... Thula is a client that i have been sleeping with for the whole week, apparently he had paid Moghana 100 000 to have me for a week....

He was initially Peejay's client or should i say he used to sleep with Peejay but then I don't know what happened he didn't want nothing to do with her anymore...

He hugged me and kissed me. Thula is rich he has a lot of tenders and he has promised to give me a tender. He told me that he has a wife but they divorced...

He walked inside, as soon as his eyes locked with Peejay's eyes i could see how irritated he was...

Peejay looked more like she was hurt, her eyes said a lot..

I cleared my throat, because the silence in the room was becoming highly weird... Me: (clearing my throat) Peejay: i.. I need to..

She walked away.. I looked at Thula..

Me: What's the beef between you and Peejay kanti? Him: Never mind that!

He pulled me closer and kissed me..

Him: Can i take you out Saturday night? Me: Ofcause

Him: just to say thank you... I smiled at him and kissed him..

.

.
.
KRESI

Hai ke ever since Gesh and Carl came to tell Tpee about me being a prostitute he started acting strange towards me. He wasn't really talking to me, he would leave at 5am and come back at 00:00am when im sleeping. It was almost as if like he was trying to avoid me. Although we shared the same bed but we were now complete strangers...

I really didn't expect this though, I thought he was gonna give me a serious Ass whopping but he didn't...

I went downstairs to find him eating breakfast. That was a first to actual have him eating at home...

He was concentrating on the newspaper that he was reading while drinking coffee... Eish should i greet him? Should I keep quiet..

I walked up to the fridge and poured myself orange juice...

I then went to sit opposite him... He folded his newspaper took his coffee and Walked out, that was like a knife straight in my heart..

.
.
. #SAMMY

Saturday came i was preparing myself since Thula was taking me out. I wore a very shorttight red dress, with red heels. I did box braids they were Maroon and Black. Moghana clapped her hands as i Walked down those stairs..

Her: You look so beautiful go and eat his heart away.. I smiled..

Moghana: His waiting for you outside Me: I'll be back later guys..

They waved goodbye and i started walking away.. When i was at the kitchen someone called out my name and it was Peejay

Her: Sammy i need to tell you something about Thula... Me: I'm listening...

She held my hands, okay that was weird... She had tears in her eyes
Me: Peejay what's wrong?

Her: This is hard but..

Moghana walked in....

Moghana: i thought you'll be gone, Thula is waiting for you
outside
Me: Peejay wanted to tell me something

Peejay faked a smile

Peejay: Its nothing hun go and enjoy yourself..

I looked at her as moghana walked me out..... I got into Thula's car and he opened the door for me..

I got in and he got in too then started driving away.... Him:
You look beautiful

Me: Thank you.....

We drove up to the lounge, this was the last place i wanted to be at mostly because Carl and his crew chill here

Me: couldn't we go anywhere else Him: i love this place!

We walked in and got a table... He bought alcohol we drank and all that. We even hit the dance floor...

They were playing "work-rihanna"

I was all up Shaking my Ass and he was standing behind me with my Ass all up against his dick...

I really had a good time the crowd was cheering us, wasn't alot of crowd though.... When i was tired we went and Sat down with me sitting ontop of him..

Thula: i never knew you can dance like that

Me: I'm a prostitute remember Him: a beautiful one..

He kissed me on my cheek... We continued drinking until something told me to look upstairs.. I couldn't believe what i saw. It was Carl and his crew when the hell did they get here... Carl was standing right at the balcony starring at us.. My heart started very fast.. My whole body started trembling in fear..

That Thula noticed Him: Are you okay?

Me: uhm Ya i.. I think i wanna go Him: We just got here

Me: i wanna go.. Please

Him: Okay we'll go to my place

Me: As long as I'm out of here it's fine..

We stood up and Walked out to his car... I was soo relieved when we got out of there... We got there and he started looking for his car keys..

Me: Are you okay?

Him: i think i misplaced my car keys..

Someone showed up behind his car, he was driving a SUV..

Voice: Looking for this??

Shit it was Carl!!

Gesh Came from the other side holding a gun, Thula was starting to get a bit scared he held me by my hand

Him: You guys can have the Car, just don't hurt us..

As we were walking away Tpee approached us pointing a gun at us.... Thula: Guys please you can have the Car

Carl laughed

Carl: Do you think i would take your useless car, nigga you should come and see what im driving!!!

Tpee had a bottle of Jack Daniels with him, they did look a bit drunk.. Thula: What do you guys want from us?

Tpee: We wanna dance...

Carl: What? I thought we were gonna kill this Motherf*****

Gesh: Tpee is right we gonna dance!! Gimme the car keys

Carl gave Gesh...Gesh unlocked the car and opened...he looked to be connecting something then after i heard Kwesta's song Nomayini playing the volume was high.....

Tpee: Now that's my shit!!. Gesh: After this soshay'ingudu Their behaviour was rather strange they started dancing and singing along, while still holding

their guns except Carl didn't have a gun.. They were busy sipping on Jack Daniels Them: "Aw'ngithi jaiva ufudumale nana, Thina sob'shaya kphum'langa Ntanga.. Asizang'dlala sophanda isaka.. Sphushe iskhanda ngale namba namba.. Ayyy lana ziyawa biza abogata" There way they were dancing was nice though doing the Dab and all that.... We were standing there looking at them i was wondering what their plan was...

PART 33 ANGEL: SAMMY'S HEART

April 5, 2016 [visionarywritings](#)

I was seriously irritated by their behaviour they should just do what they wanna do and then we move on.....

Thula: What do you guys really want? Carl looked at me

Him: i want what's mine, i want my prostitute.. He stretched out his hand to me..

I tried my level best to ignore him Mara he wasn't having none

of that, his facial expression changed....

Him: Angel!

Shit how did he know that name..

I went to him, he was leaning against Thula's car. He put his hands around my waist and was just kissing my cleavage...

Gesh: I hope they won't be any sexual scenes in our presence

Carl: I'm just admiring my prostitute..

Tpee: Admire her at your own Place for the whole night!

Carl: That's a good plan

Me: I'm not going anywhere with you! Him: No you are going somewhere with me!

I got his hands off me and attempted to walk away but he pulled Me back. Him: Should i call... Agh what's that bitch's name?

Tpee: Lady Mona

Gesh: Moghana

Carl: Should i call her and let her know that you refusing to attend to a potential client? Why Carl was doing this, I'll never know...

He held my hand and we walked out to his car, then drove up to his place.....

...

We went straight to his bedroom. Me: Why are you doing this? He opened his drawer and took out some pills they were silver and then poured water and drank....

Him: Doing what?

Me: Torturing me?

Him: i don't know what you talking about. You a prostitute and I'm a potential client.. Just like them i wanna have a piece of you!

He took out a pack of condoms...

He came closer, we not gonna make love we gonna have sex.....

With that being said he ripped off my dress, seriously this guy was gonna kill me.....

He took of my underwear but didn't take off my bra He also took off his clothes until he was left with his boy shorts. He then instructed me to go down on him, ain't nothing i don't like giving a Nigga a BJ.....

After sometime of giving him a BJ he pulled Me up by my weave and kissed me while leading Me to the bed.... He sat down and i rolled down the condom on his very hard shaft.... I got ontop of him and it was painful when he made his way inside because I was still dry and i have bad experiences with condoms hurting me.....

He held me tight on my waist and helped me to go up and down on him... He then took off my bra and started sucking my titts very hard which was painful.....

I was trying not to scream or cry i just didn't wanna give him that satisfaction that his hurting me but it was hard to keep all that emotion inside.....

We went on and on, I was now very tired and very much in pain but Carl was still on fire... My body had bruises he would literally bite me, he was really treating me like a prostitute....I was now crying and begging him to stop but he wasn't having that, he went on and on.....

He finally came and that had an impact on my weave which he was pulling while moaning.....

After coming he collapsed ontop of me, i was very tired that i passed out immediately.....

.
I woke up that morning in soo much pain walking was a mission now i know how Kresi felt...

I walked to the toilet to pee, i swear it was like something put burning match sticks inside of me, i literally screamed.....

I bathe which was also difficult. I must Ask Moghana to give me a week or so to heal.... Since he ripped my dress. I wore his Nike pants and his Nike T-shirt and i also wore his sleepers...

He wasn't around i don't know were he went.. As i was walking out i noticed something on the dressing table, it was stacks of cash with a note at the top written "Your payment" i took out one stack of cash and started counting it, it was 10 000 and the was like 5 stacks which meant he was paying 50 000 no one has paid Me that much for one night...

I went downstairs and found Jeany eating breakfast, she lost it when she saw me. She ran to hug me all screaming i picked her up..

Me: Hey you sweet thing

I started tickling her she was laughing. Her: i missed you Me: i missed you too.

Carl walked in as i was holding Jeany. He was walking funny i think he was also pain, I mean you can't have sex the whole night and expect to be fine in the morning...

He held on to the table and closed his eyes a bit, i was trying so

hard not to laugh but i couldn't i just burst out of laughter....

He looked at me....

Me: Shame are you pain?

He gave me a death stare then clicked his tongue..

Him: Jeany come and finish your food so i can drive you to

Jojo's house..Jeany: Okay

I put her down and she went to finish off her food... Carl:
Who said you can wear my clothes?

Me: You ripped off my dress what was i supposed to wear?

He started walking again shame, was a slow painful walk...

Him:

i gots to go and a Doctor!!

I was laughing but not that loud anymore because i didn't
wanna piss him off...

.

.

KRESI

I was starrng myself in the mirror, my tummy was a bit big. I
mean I've always maintained a flat tummy i don't know were
this small bump comes from.. It wasn't that big but still it
wasn't sitting well with me...

My short was very tight now..

Me: ontop of that I'm gaining weight, that's just great!!

I put on my crop tee, the bump really got to me i swear but at
least i have a belly ring which made it look good..

I put on my flops and went downstairs. Tshepi's Aunt had
prepared breakfast again and I was very hungry... As i got to
the kitchen Tshepi was vomiting in the sink with his Aunt next
to him....

Aunt: What did you eat?

Him: i don't know it's like every food i eat lately ain't for
me, and i feel very nauseated been going for over a week now..

Aunt: You should see the doctor Him:

i will if it keeps on going on.. Me:

Good morning

His Aunt was the only one that greeted me back... He turned
around to just look at me from head to toe... His Aunt cleaned
the sink..

He eyes were glued at me, i looked at myself too like what's
going on.. Aunt: Let's sit down and eat

Tshepi: after what happened i don't think I'm in the mood for
food he then walked Away... I sat down. Me: smells good Her:

Dig in!

I don't know for how long is Tshepi gonna keep this silent treatment because i truly miss him...

Me: Excuse me

I stood up and Walked upstairs, i was gonna kill this silent treatment once and for all... He was on the phone, he had his back facing the door.. I stood there and listened to his conversation..

Him: I don't know if I'll be able to keep this silent treatment going Dog Desean I'm telling she looked sexy as fuck i just felt like grabbing her and fucking the living daylights out of her! I don't know Dog there's something about her this days she's glowing and all that...

He turned around and saw me standing there... Him: I'll call you later Dog....Yeah....Cool...

He walked up to me.....he picked me up and started kissing me..

.
.

SAMMY

Carl dropped me off at Friend-Segal as he was driving Jeany to his Aunt's place... I kissed Jeany goodbye and Walked into the yard.. I had the cash he gave me to give to moghana.....

I found Peejay at the kitchen drinking pills, she looked upset was crying... Me: Hey

She turned and looked at me... Her: Hey

Me: Are you okay?

She couldn't stop the tears. She took the bottle of pills and gave them to me..I checked them..

Me: What's this?

Her: ARVs I'm gonna live on that forever Me: What does this have to do with me?

Her: That's what I've been trying to tell you about Thula...His HIV+

I dropped the pills, everything started moving slowly the only words i had from her was HIV+

PART 34 ANGEL: SAMMY'S HEART

April 5, 2016 [visionarywritings](#)

I was walking up and down in my bedroom with a bottle of Wine in my hand. I cannot be Hiv+ although logic proves that i am...

I had been sleeping with Thula for week and yes we didn't use protection his not a person who wants to use a condom and i didn't enforce the issue because I have had bad experiences with condoms they hurt me like i said...

The was a knock at my door... Me: Come in.
Peejay walked in..

Me: Peejay I'm not in the mood

Her: Please you need to go and get tested

Me: How do you even know that Thula is the one who infected you? Is he the only person you have slept with?

Peejay: No Me:
exactly!

Peejay: But I'm telling you its him! Thula has a bad reputation of doing this and that is infecting girls then running away..

Me: What proof do you have?!

Her: if you want proof then go and test! I sat down....

Me: I'm scared, i cannot be Hiv+

Her: Look the nurse counselled me and told me that it's not a death sentence Me: i cannot be Hiv+ Peejay I'm only 21!

Her: and I'm 24! I didn't ask for this.. She put her hand on my shoulders.. Her:

I will go with you.

I looked at her....

Me: Fine I'll go and change..

.
. .

KRESI

Tshepi ended up with just picking me up but we never made it to the bed, he had to rush to the bathroom and vomit...

I was starting to get really worried about him because he was missing work constantly because of that.. He came out from the bathroom i could see that he was done, he was dead weak...

I was sitting on the bed, he just laid on the bed with his head on my thighs. I was playing with his dreadlocks..

Me: You still don't wanna see the doctor? Him: I'll be fine

I leaned over and pecked him on his lips

Me: But you getting more and more worse Him: Its just a stomach bug

Me: Please let's go and see the doctor He looked at me

Him: You never gonna let this go right?

I nodded my head yes..

He put his hand around my neck and pulled me down to give me a kiss....Him: Let's go..

We got up and went..

..

After a long drive to his private doctor we finally arrived..

Luckily he was free with no appointments.. So we just walked in, he was Indian...

Him: Tshepi it's good to see you Tshepi: Can't sat the same

Him: Still scared of seeing a GP?

Tshepi: That fear never goes away I looked at Tshepi..

Me: You scared of doctors?

Dr: Not just scared but terrified. I laughed..

Tshepi: Enough about making me a joke let's get to the real reason that brings me here The doctor got his file..

Dr: I'm even surprised your file is still here..

He sat down again... Dr:

What can i do for you?

Tshepi: Where can i start man.. Ya I've been feeling very nauseated lately. Certain foods make me vomit, certain smells put me off.. I'm always craving for foods I've never had an interest in Eating before.. I'm mostly tired and wanna sleep..

That's round about it. Dr: Sounds to me like you have been getting morning sicknesses Tshepi: Morning what?

The Dr looked at me

Him: Are you guys a couple? We nodded

Dr: She might be pregnant

Me: Pre... No that's not possible i.. I was on injection Dr:

When last did you get your dose?

Me: Its.. It's been months

He stood up and got me a pregnancy test then showed me the bathroom....

I went to the bathroom and did the deed...I didn't wanna see we the results so i went back and gave the doctor. He wore gloves and took it

Him: Now we wait

I was really scared, i cannot be pregnant.. There was silence in the room...

After a few minutes the doctor looked at the pregnancy test, and then looked at us...

Him: Congratulations you guys are gonna be parents soon.
She's pregnant I did not expect that at all...

.
.

SAMMY

We were at the clinic sitting in the cue. I was about to go in,
my palms were sweaty i was very scared...

The nurse came out and looked at us Her:

You can come in..

I stood up, my knees were weak.. Peejay: You'll find Me here

Me: Please come... Come with me She stood up and we went
in..

We sat down...

Nurse: What can i do for you?

She was sweet and smiling, she once in a million Me: I'm...

Suddenly there was a lump in my throat

Me: Hiv test

Peejay: She means that she's here to do an Hiv test Nurse: You
look scared are you okay?

Peejay: We.. We slept with the same guy and i found out last

week that I'm Hiv + Nurse: You know Hiv is not a death
sentence...

She went on with the pre-counselling but i didn't hear a word
she said..

When she was done she took the kit and put on her gloves... I
couldn't even feel the needle pricking me....

Now we had to wait...

She was writing on the file while we waited.. Peejay held my
hand.. Nurse: here it goes

She looked at it for a long time, then put it down and took off
her glasses..

Her: I'm sorry but you are reactive, meaning you are Hiv+ My
heart was beating very fast my world was crashing down...

Her: But i can take your blood and..

I stood up and Walked out.. I had no tears i was just too much
in shock..

PART 35 ANGEL: SAMMY'S HEART

April 5, 2016 [visionarywritings](#)

When i was calm i went back to the nurse's office and she took some of my blood from my arm to send to the lab and told me to come after a week to get my results....

We passed by at the mall first bought some alcohol and went back to the house...

This is how i was gonna live my life, drink everyday enjoy life so that when i die i know that i would've enjoyed life...

Peejay: Its crazy isn't it? To know that we dying soon

Me: It is.. How's the medication though? Her: Its shit.. The after effects are hell!

Me: I'll be on that soon!

She handed me the glass of whiskey Me: Cheers to the dying soon

Her: Cheers

Me: At least we don't have kids that would be sad having to leave them Her: That's true

Her: and we not dating anyone so we safe... Me: Ya we are I took a sip of the wine.. I wish that was easy but Carl still holds a spot in my heart..

.
.

KRESI

We got home and Tshepi hasn't said a word ever since we left the doctors office. His Aunt was at the kitchen..

Me: Tshepi please talk to me He poured himself some juice..

Me: I'm also scared just like you but you don't see me ignoring me...

He put the glass on the kitchen counter, he didn't face me. He had his back against me... Him: Is it mine?

Wow what a question...

Me: What kind of a question is that? Aunt: I'll just excuse myself

Tshepi turned around and looked at his Aunt

Tshepi: That's unnecessary we not fighting Me: The baby is

yours

Him: i want a pertenity test done! Me: fine after 9 months we can do it.

Him: Did you fall and knock your head somewhere? I looked at him

Him: i want it down now!

Aunt: That will put the baby in danger, the baby can die...

What if she miscarries?

Him: I don't care!! I am not gonna father a baby that's not mine!! His mood had changed he was now pissed.. He looked at me. Him: i want that pertenity test!!

He then walked out... How can he be soo heartless??

.
.

SAMMY

Haike the week went i didn't do much just drinking and partying and sleeping around....Having Hiv doesn't necessarily mean that I can't continue with my work. I didn't care about who i was infecting i also got infecting.. I was living my life in a way that i didn't care what happens anymore... I was only living for the here and now, i didn't care about the future anymore. Especially the kind of future that i wasn't gonna have...

Peejay accompanied me to the clinic as always, only me and her knows about this....

Nurse: How are you feeling today? I just shrugged my shoulders..

Her: i want you to know that this...

Me: ive heard you the first time! Can we just move on with this shit! She got my file and opened it then handed it to me...

I tested negative for everything except for Hiv...I was HIV+ so this shit was real! Me: So what happens now? Do i start on ARVs?

Her: Unfortunately in the government sector you start with ARVs when your CD4 count is below 350, we still need to check yours....

Me: i still feel fine so i don't really need that now....I Stood up..

Me: Peejay let's go

She stood up we left.....

Although i was trying to be strong and act like i don't care, but who was i kidding i did care.No Matter how you've lived your life but Death scares us all.....

I was laying on my bed all crying.. I took my phone and text Carl. I want him to move on, he must just find someone worthy, and that person won't be me....

I text him everything, including that I'm HIV+ although this will be hard for him to process but at least he would've heard it from me and not someone else..

He called after like 5min.. I ignored his calls he kept on calling and calling until i switched off my phone.....

I chilled in my room for the whole night just shutting the whole world out and everyone out..Moghana came In... She sat next to me

Her: Peejay told me

Eyy Peejay with her big mouth... Moghana: Sit up straight I sat up straight.

Her: i know someone who has lived with this for 10 years and she's still going strongMe: Who?

Her: Me..

Moghana is Hiv +??????

Her: Look Angel i don't encourage people feeling sorry for themselves. You hiv + so what?? You can still live your life and..

We suddenly heard noise..Her: Whose that?

We heard the girls screaming..

We looked at each other and Walked out to see what's happening and i couldn't believe this..it was Carl, Tpee, and Gesh..

This time around they were on hoover boards busy going round and round with the girls sitting on the couch looking All scared...

They had white paper cups and playing music very loud i just couldn't spot the device that they were playing music from..

Them: "we going out, tonight yeah we going out tonight.. Like fuck it" Tpee: i still cannot believe Kush's record label chose you to be in his video Carl: What?? I can't hear you??

Tpee: Gesh switch it off (yelling)

Gesh was just rolling around in circles with his hoover board.... I was standing there thinking to myself Not again..

PART 36 ANGEL: SAMMY'S HEART

April 5, 2016 [visionarywritings](#)

Yazi nje Carl and his friends they like showing up.. Moghana

was Angry now Moghana: Who are this boys making noise in my house!

We went down, Gesh turned off the music. Carl was looking wow as always with his cap thathe always wears backwards..

Gesh: Your highness how nice of you to grace us with your presence....

He said that while looking at Moghana and takin a bow...

Moghana: Did someone call security

Tpee: Yeah your security is a bit tied up for now..Moghana:
I'm calling the police

Tpee took out his gun and pointed it at Moghana... Tpee: Sit
down!!

Moghana didn't protest she sat down... I was very irritated by
their behaviour.. Carl came to me with his hoover board..

Him: Can we talk?

Me: What are you doing here? Him: Can we talk please?

Me: Fine..

We walked upstairs to my room.. Him: I'm here to take you
home Me: Carl please

Him: Sammy take your things we leaving

Me: Didn't you get my message? Him: i got it

Me: Then please go and find yourself someo..

Him: Don't do that.. You cannot make that decision for me

Me: Carl I'm a prostitute and I'm hiv+ I'll never be able to
give you kids Him: Who said i want kids?

Me: We can never have a normal life with me dying Him: You
not dying, you can live for many years Me:

Look Carl..

Him: No you look! Just Because you are a prostitute and Hiv+
doesn't mean you don't deserve to be loved. You have been
hurt all your life and you constantly holding on to memories
that hurt you and destroy you emotionally..

Now i wanna show you the other side of life, that you can be
happy even after all that. I wanna create new memories, ones
that you'll always find yourself smiling when you think of
them.....

Those words were literally making me cry.. He came closer to
me Him: Come home with me..

I looked at him with my teary eyes trying hoping that he will
say I'm joking but he wasn't, he was serious about what he
was saying...

Me: I'll come with you

He smiled showing off his dimples that made him to look more cute.. He came and held my hands with his forehead against mine..

Him: I'll get you the best medical care that money can buy, your health is always gonna be my number one priority, and I promise to shower you with love always and forever.... He kissed me through my tears.... Him: Let's go

Me: My clothes

Him: I'll get you New ones we creating new memories remember Me: Okay..

We walked out to meet the rest of the others... Carl: Let's go guys..

Gesh: Let me get that shit!

Gesh walked out...

Moghana: You will never get away with this

Carl: We will! The person who will never get away with this is you!.. You have tortured and abused this girls you deserve everything that we are about to do to you!

Moghana: i made this girls

Carl: You destroyed this girls!!! I should even fuck you up right now!

Gesh Came in with a bag and opened it.. He took out small packages and gave it to the girls who have been quite this whole time...

Gesh: That's 50 000 in cash! It will hell you to start new lives. With that being said ningavaya (you can go)

They looked shocked... Gesh:

You still here?

They stood up and went to get some of their things and went...

Carl: So whose gonna take care of this?

Tpee: i have experience in this so i will..

Gesh: We'll meet up later then.. Gesh went first

Carl: Should also burn this place Down.. It shouldn't exist anymore! Tpee: Ayt

Carl looked at me

Him: Have you been in a hoover board before? Me: No Him: Then hop on

Me: won't i fall? Him: No you got me

I hopped on and he held me tight then we went... I must sat i

found the hoover board really nice..

Before heading home we went to buy me some clothes at some expensive boutiques. He bought me designer clothes only never realised that Carl was this rich all those clothes amounted to a lot of money that I can't even literally call it out.....

He took me to the salon I did my hair, did manicure and pedicure too... We went to even have lunch then after we went home.....

We got there and Jeany was watching Tv.... Carl:

Hey my Angel

She turned around and looked at us... Then ran up to me and I picked her up.. Me: You getting very heavy for me to pick you up now..

Carl: Where's Jojo?

Jeany: She's in the laundry room..

Carl: Let me go and put this upstairs I'm coming..

Jeany and I went to the kitchen. I sat her on top of the kitchen counter and took out a tub of Ice cream..

Me: Jeany tell me something.. Are you scared of dying?

Her: No.. Jojo said I'm gonna be carried out by really nice Angels.. She said I'm gonna meet Mommy and daddy In heaven.

I got us spoons and we started eating... Me: You wanna know something? She looked at me too

Me: I'm dying too

Her: Why? Do you also have cancer? Me:

No sweetheart I have another disease Her:

Are you also gonna be in heaven? Me: I hope

Carl: Nobody is dying, and I don't wanna hear none of this death talks anymore

I didn't realise that he was listening to us.... He came and took the tub of Ice cream..

Him: And none of you should be eating Ice cream.. No more ice cream.. Jeany: Nooooooooooooooooo!!!

Me: There's no harm in Eating Ice cream.. Him: There is, because you..

He pointed at Jeany

Him: You'll be vomiting in an hour, and you.. He looked at me..

Him: You immunocompromised this will give you flu that will take long to heal... He threw it in the trash can..

Him: Jeany go watch Barney Jojo will come and make you something to eat, and Sammy we have dinner plans with the guys go and prepare yourself.....

We went our separate ways me going upstairs with Carl and Jeany going to watch Barney.....

.
.

KRESI

the door bell was ringing like crazy, i went to open the door. It was that same white guy who once came Mr Duve.....nton nton

Him: Is Tpee here?

Me: Uhm yes I'll get him.. Please come in

He had a paper with him.....Just when i was about to fetch Tpee he showed up Tpee: Duvenhage i thought you were not coming anymore

Him: i was attending something

Tpee: I'm glad you here Tshepi looked at me

Me: I'll just go and Watch TV

I walked away, i wasn't gonna go and watch TV i was eavesdropping...

Duvenhage: here's your bandanna and the Crips are very pleased to have you as a member Tpee: I'm honored...I'll do anything and everything to make Riley perish..

Him: At least we have the same goal... Now this is a plan of Riley's house he has stashed diamonds in the basement which amount to 23mill.... We get that we share it Tpee: Did Carl draw up this plan?

Duvenhage: Yes...

Tpee: Its perfect.. We'll be in and out of there before they can even get to us... What was Tshepi doing!!

PART 37 ANGEL: SAMMY'S HEART

April 9, 2016 [visionarywritings](#)

Carl and i dressed up to go and meet his crew at some 5 star hotel.....

We got there, and only Gesh was around Tpee and Kresi weren't there as yet. I couldn't wait to see Kresi, it's been a while since we last talked.....

They arrived after like 15min...I stood up and hugged Kresi while the boys talked about things that don't interest us.. We went and stood at the balcony..

Me: Ohh my God you look beautiful you glowing, and look at that Ass you getting bigger what's happening? Is Tpee hitting it good? She laughed.

Her: Agh it's not like that. Me: Then what is it?

Her: Well i recently found out that I'm pregnant My jaw
Dropped.

Me: Ohw my word congratulations! I hugged her.

Me: That is good news, how is Tpee taking it? I'm sure his
happy She looked down..

Me: What's wrong?

Her: He.. He doesn't believe that it's his... Me: What? You
not that big so it has to be his!

Me: He wants us to do a pertenity test while the baby is still
inside of me Me: That's crazy! I heard it's dangerous he cannot
do that

Her: That's what he wants!... Anyway I see you and Carl are
hitting off things are looking

good.. When are you having your own kids

That's the subject i don't wanna touch on.. Me: We never
gonna have kids Her:

Why?

Me: We were hit with a bomb not so long ago Her: What's
wrong Sam.. Talk to me..

I exhaled and closed my eyes. I might as well tell her, she's the
closest thing I have to a friend... Me: I'm Hiv+

She sighed, with her hand covering her mouth and her eyes
wide open. Her: No!!!! (shouting)

The boys looked at us...

Her: Sorry i didn't mean to shout..

They went back to what they were talking about.. Her: How did
it happen?

Me: i slept with Thula, still remember him? Kresi: The one that
used to sleep with Peejay? I nodded

Her: So that means Peejay is also?? Inodded..

Me: i cannot believe this! Why didn't moghana see this

beforehand Me: You know moghana she doesn't care about
anything but money! Kresi: Legal action should be taken, this is

wrong were is she?

Me: Ask your man

Her: What does Tshepi have to do with this?

I shrugged my shoulders

Me: Anyway I'm just looking to make the best of my life and spend each moment of it with someone i love..

I looked at Carl..

Kresi: Does he know?

Me: Yes i told him..

She hugged me

Her: Wow I'm soo proud of you.. Carl came to us...

Him: We can go and eat now..

Kresi left us and went to sit at the table... Carl rubbed my arm..

Him: Are you okay? I nodded

Him: You not feeling cold? I smiled and put my hand on his face

Me: I'm fine.. He kissed me..

Gesh: Are you guys gonn join us or not? (shouting)

I wiped my lipstick off his lips, and we went to join the others..

I wasn't very familiar with the menu so i ordered me a Greek salad and Grapetiser i have started takin care of myself...

Carl: Gesh i thought you were gonna Bring Melody

Gesh: i can't, Nokhanya is tracing my every step. She probably knows were i am now.. Carl: Man your bitch is crazy!

Tpee was rather quiet, not engaging in the convo.... Gesh:

Tpee are you good G?

Tshepi: I'm ayt

Carl: You very quiet which is unlike you..

He exhaled.

Tpee: I need to tell you guys something They looked at him..

He lifted up the sleeve of his jacket and revealed a blue

Bandana.. Fork fell from Carl and Gesh..

Gesh: What the fuck is that? Tpee: i think it's pretty clear Carl:

You can't do that man!

Tpee: i think i can, I watched yall sipping sons of bitches rolling with my Enemy everyday! Did i say anything?

Gesh: That's different

Tpee: How? For all i know we can still be friends.. Carl: Can't be possible

Tpee: But it was possible when yall were on Riley's dick now that i found me a crew we can't be Gs anymore?

Gesh: This is Bullshit! I'm out! Gesh stood up..

Carl: G sit down..

Gesh: For what? It's pretty clear this Motherf***** never cared about our friendship or else he wouldn't have joined the crips knowing that the bloods and crips are the biggest rivals! I should even be popping a cap on ya right now!

Tpee: Gesh you on some Vagina shit! See what the bloods do? Now your Ass can't hang with me anymore!

Gesh approached Tpee

Gesh: Who you calling a vagina?

Tpee stood up, Kresi stood in front of them..

Gesh: i was still Gesh even before the bloods! I didn't need Riley to make me relevant unlike you motherf***** you need Duvenhage to make you relevant! Nigga you weren't shit before i put you on!

He clicked his tongue and went...

Tpee was boiling inside, he looked at Carl..

Tpee: Its on! That motherf*** is no longer my G. His my Enemy now, a biggest enemy for that matter!!

He stood up and went with Kresi following him... I put down my glass.. Me: Woow!

Carl put his hands on his face letting out a sigh...

.

.

KRESI

The drive home was hell, Tshepi was Angry and driving like shit but i was happy to have made it home safe.. We were in the bedroom and he was undressing..

Me: That didn't go well!

He turned and looked at me..

Him: When the fuck are you doing the Prenatal Perternity test?

Me: pardon?

Him: i need to know if that thing you carrying is mine or not?

Me: Ohh wow!!

Him: i want that Prenatal Pertenity test done ASAP!!

Me: i am not going to put my baby in danger like that! Him:

That explains it all, the baby is not mine!

Me: the baby is yours! If it wasn't yours then explain the morning sick... He approached me, he was furious

Him: Eyy!! Did you fucken hear what i said?? Either you do that Prenatal Pertenity test or you get the fuck out of my house and go back to the streets were you come from!!! My eyes were immediately filled with Tears..

Me: Fine me and this "thing" we'll move out and you'll never see us again!! I started walking to the closet to get my things...

Tshepi: Kresi im... I didn't mean it like that..

I got to the closet and took out my luggage bag with tears falling, i was very heartbroken i never knew that Tpee can be this Heartless..

PART 38 ANGEL: SAMMY'S HEART

April 9, 2016 [visionarywritings](#)

Kresi had called me all crying saying i should come fetch her. I didn't waste time i went to Carl in the study....

Me: Babe we need to go and fetch Kresi

Him: Why what's wrong?

She called me crying i don't know what Tpee is doing to her...

Carl stood up and took his car keys...

Carl: Shit!!! We need to hurry Tpee is Crazy he can actually kill her!!

.

.

KRESI

I had packed a few of my clothes and i Walked downstairs. Tpee was at the kitchen drinking whiskey, he seemed to be halfway with that...

I ignored him and Kept walking, he blocked the door... I started being a bit scared, Tshepi can sometimes turn into this person i don't know.. Me: Can you please step out of my way

Him: i didn't mean what i said I'm sorry Me: Please step out of my way..

Him: I'm sorry....

He stepped out of my way and Walked up to the table. I tried opening the door but it was

locked... I turned back and he threw the whiskey bottle at me, i ducked just in time and it hit

the door and broke some of the pieces made it through my skin.... Him: i said i was fucken sorry and you still wanna go?? (shouting)

I looked at him he wasn't the Tpee i know anymore yes he was drunk but the monster that has made it to his conscious really scared me..

I didn't know what to say or do, I was very scared... He wiped his face with his hands... Then came to me i moved back till I made it against the door stepping on some of the broken pieces.. He put his hand on my cheek..

Him: i love you Kresi.. You just don't understand how much i love you!..

I was Shaking and my heart was beating very fast this guy was scaring me... He made me step aside.. Then he crouched down picking up the broken pieces of the whiskey bottle..

Him: I'll pick this up and then we'll just act like all of this didn't happen..

I was standing there looking at him. He even cut himself with some of the pieces he was bleeding profusely.... Him: I'll just clean this up an..

Me: You bleeding...

He checked his hand and went to the sink and ran water on his hand with his other hand on his forehead....

I was still standing there didn't wanna say anything.....my knees were literally Shaking.. He then took a cloth and wrapped it around his hand.. I wish that her Aunt was here but unfortunately it was just me and him..

He looked at me, he didn't portray anger anymore he looked more ashamed of his behaviour.. He then looked down i Walked up to him.. I took off the cloth from his hand and wrapped it again my hands were Shaking...he held my hand, my heart skipped a bit...he then let go and i continued wrapping the cloth around his hand.... Me: This should...

I cleared my throat..

Me: This should stop the bleeding...

I let go of his hand when i was done...

Him: Don't leave me Kresi.....Nissi used too.. She..Me: I'm not Nissi

He looked at me..

Him: Ofcause you not her..You.. Someone started banging at the door..

Sammy: Kresi are you there? It's me girl open!

Tpee looked at me, i saw the anger again in his eyes... Tpee: Why is she here?

Sammy: Kresi im here to fetch you girl!!

Tpee looked at me, i looked at him too.. Then i started running to the door but i felt him grabbing me by my weave.. Me: Sammy!!!!!!

Sammy: Kresi!!!!!!..... Carl we`ll have to break the door I was on the floor and he was dragging me across the floor all kicking and screaming. Yes i feared for my life but mostly i feared for my baby... Him: So you wanna Leave me huh???

Me: Tshepi stop!!!

I was crying and screaming...

Him: Nissi walked out on me alot of times and you wanna do the same too?? Me: i am not Nissi!!!

Carl: G open the door please!! Sammy: Call the Cops Carl...

Carl: I can` t call the Cops on him his..

Sammy: Just call the Cops that`s my friend in there!!

Tpee: You cannot leave me Kresi because I`ll love till death!! He was dragging me upstairs those stairs were not having Mercy especially with the broken pieces that made their way through my skin..

Him: I`ll throw you off the balcony and hope your head makes it down first so that your brain can be splashed all around.. Me: Tshepi please stop!!

Him: You really think I`m gonna let you go!! You are mine you supposed to love Me till the end!!

When he was pulling my weave i could feel my skin being pulled too.. Me: i do love you Tpee!!

Him: That`s why you leaving me?

We got into the bedroom, he threw me on the floor and went to open the sliding door.. I tried crawling through the floor and he grabbed me from my waist...

I tried kicking and screaming...

Me: Think of the baby what if it`s yours!!

He stopped... He turned me around to face him.. Him: Say that again!

I don` t know if that was right to say or not but it`s all i got now.. Me: What if the baby is yours??

He put his hand on my cheek and kissed me..

Him: the baby has to be mine.. I nodded my head yes..

Me: i swear it's yours, i have never slept with anyone ever since i started dating you.. Him: Are you sure about that??

Me: i am sure.. The baby is yours!

He knelt down and put his hands on my waist and his head against my tummy... Him: i almost killed my own baby!

I don't know for how much this was gonna go on but I was hoping for Sammy to come through...

And she did. The door flung open she was with Cops and Carl..

Cop1: step away from her and Put your hands where i can see them!

Sammy ran to me as Tpee was getting up and putting his hands behind his head.. Sammy hugged me, she was also in tears

Her: Omg you Shaking I was crying senseless..

Me: He almost killed me Sam...

The cop started handcuffing Tpee, Sammy went to him and slapped him.. Sammy: i wish they lock you up and throw away the key you bastard!!

She spat on him, and Tpee tried to hit her but he couldn't because he was handcuffed and the cop was holding him tight and leading him away.. Sammy came back to me..

Her: Are you okay??

Me: i feared for my baby..

Her: You okay... Omg look at you that bastard really hurt you!

Carl took off his jacket and put it around me and we walked away. Me: Carl Tpee needs serious help.. Serious professional help

Carl: I know...

Sammy: You'll stay with us.. We'll get a protection order.. I swear if he dares to touch you again!! I hope they lock him away!!

I almost died again in the hands of a man who claims to love Me..

PART 39 ANGEL: SAMMY'S HEART

April 9, 2016 [visionarywritings](#)

SAMMY

We got to my place and Kresi was a wreck, had i not found her only God knows what would've happened.....

Me: I'll walk you to the bathroom keep you company while you bath

Her: I'll be fine Me: Are you sure? Her: Yes..

Me: I'll check up on you then.. Her: Okay

She walked to the guest room with her luggage bag... Carl came and hugged me.. Me: Had we not found her in time..

He squeezed me tight, and kissed me on my forehead... Him:
Don't beat yourself with Hypothesis, we found her Alive.. The
door bell rang....

Me: Expecting anyone?

Him: No..

He went to the door and opened, i was surprised at who walked
in.. It was Riley he looked fine now. Was walking on his own
without a cane..

We had alot of drama today and I'm not ready for this drama
now...

Carl: i wasn't expecting you Riley: This is not a friendly visit..

Carl: Then what brings you here? Riley looked at me..

Me: I'll go and check on Kresi...

I walked out but stood by the door to listen to everything..

Riley: Someone broke into my house and stole my diamonds..

Carl: That's bad.

Riley: You know what's also bad? Carl: Yea?

Riley: the person who did this, did it soo perfectly! It's like
they knew my house in an out because the was no force of
entry.. So this person must have had help!!!

Carl: So were do i fit in?

Riley: Its no lie that you and Gesh have been hanging around
with my down line enemy.. The was silence for a while...

Carl: i don't know what you expect me to say i mean yeah I've
been hanging around with

Tpee his my homie and we've been homies before I even
joined the bloods!..

Riley: I don't take betrayal very lightly. I will find out who
stole my diamonds and who helped them and when i do..... I
hope heaven or hell will have a space for them!

I heard footsteps and the door opening and closing... I
walked in while Carl was standing there, he looked at me...

Me: Why don't you just tell him were the diamonds are?

Carl: i can't...

Me: If he finds out and kills you? Carl: Then I'll be buried...

He walked out and went to the bedroom.....

I went to check on Kresi she was putting on her Pjs... Me: Hey
Her: Hey

Me: preparing for bed?

Her: Yaa it's been a long day

Me: We gotta have your weave fixed tomorrow

She sat down on the bed... Her:

What did i get myself into? I went to sit next to her..

Me: You didn't know what he was about sweetie... That guy looks like he has alot of baggage and issues that he needs to sort out..

Kresi: and what's sad is that i still love him and i don't know why.. Me: That's because we don't help who we fall in love with..

Her: That's true..

Me: get some sleep and I'll check you in the morning... Her: Okay

I hugged her... Me:

i love you

Her: love you too...

I walked out to my bedroom...

.

.

KRESI

I woke up that morning and my body was aching from what happened yesterday.... I got out of bed brushed my teeth and bathe..

I went back to the bedroom to get dressed. My phone rang and it was Tpee. I didn't know If i should answer or not. He kept on calling and calling until i answered..... I didn't say anything....

Him: Kitty are you there?

I thought this nigga would be in jail.. Me: What do you want?

Him: i thought we could meet up and talk.

Me: i don't wanna talk.. Him: Kresi please

Me: Ain't you supposed to be in jail? Him: i got out this morning!

Me: Please don't ever call me okay?

Him: Ki... I hunged up... Sammy came in..

Her: Are you ready to go?

Her: uhm yeah...

She looked at me Her:

Are you alright?

Me: Tshepi called

Her: He what?? Ain't he supposed to be in jail?

Me: i think so but apparently he got out this morning Her:

Come on we getting a restraining order against him!

Me: Do you think that will help? I mean this guy just beat jail

Sammy: a restraining order will work trust me Me: Okay..

I took my bag and we walked out.. Carl was eating breakfast..

Sammy: We'll be right back Carl: Going shopping?

Sammy: No we getting your delusional Friend a restraining order. He giggled

Me: What?

Him: You mean that little paper that says he must stay away from you? Sammy: Yes

Him: Good luck

Sammy: is there anything you wanna tell us?

Carl: Naa nothing i hope that little paper really helps you..

I wish Carl can let us in more about Tshepi and what kind of a person he is...

PART 40 ANGEL: SAMMY'S HEART

April 9, 2016 [visionarywritings](#)

Kresi and i did a bit of shopping, i took her to the salon too because of her weave that was messed up...

We even went to doctor and the baby was fine she was 2 months pregnant...

After all that we went to get lunch but Carl called me and asked me to get Jeany from His Aunt's house..... I was driving his all Range rover Evoque Yes i have a license Godfather made sure that i get one as soon as i turned 19...

Kresi and i did a takeaway of two large pizzas from Romans pizza and drove up to Aunt Jojo's house..

I was very nervous i mean i don't know her I've only heard of

her..

I rang the door bell and she opened after a few minutes.. She was very beautiful and looked younger than i expected her to be.. Her: You must be Sammy? (Smiling) Me: Yes and you must be Aunt Jojo?

Her: Please call me Jojo it's already short for Joleen.... She hugged me..

Her: I've heard soo much about you, and you are what I've expected you to be

I didn't know what to say i just smiled.. Her: Please come in girls..

We went inside. Her house was small. Probably a 5 bedroom house with vintage furniture... Her: Jeany Sammy is here (shouting)... Sorry she's probably watching Cartoons. You guys can seat down and help yourselves to my freshly baked muffins while i get her..

Me: Thank you..

Kresi and i sat down..

Kresi didn't have Mercy on the muffins, i looked at her... I looked at her

Her: What? She said we can help ourselves to her freshly baked muffins and I'm helping myself..

I ignored her and ran my eyes around admiring her place...

She came with Jeany's things and Jeany.. I stood up together with Kresi taking another Muffin along. Jojo looked at her.

Kresi: I'm sorry they just too nice.. Jojo: Are you pregnant dear?

Kresi and i we were shocked..

Kresi: Uhm yes how did you know? Her:

i just know..

She winked at Kresi.. That was weird because Kresi's tummy was not even showing, you'd just think she has a big tummy...

Jojo hugged and kissed Jeany.. Jojo: Come and visit Jojo again okay?

Jeany: Yes Jojo..

Jojo: Bye poonkie i love you Jeany: I love you too

Jojo walked us to the door and waved goodbye as we took off.....

We got home and it was quiet and empty no sign of Carl...

Kresi said she's tired so she went to sleep and said we must keep a few slices of pizza for her...

Jeany and i sat down in the lounge eating pizza while watching her favourite Cartoons Regular show.. This Cartoons seemed a bit too mature for someone her own age..

Carl walked in but we didn't look at him we just heard his voice when he greeted us... I only looked at him when he came to sit down on the other couch. He was shirtless only wearing those basket ball shorts with sneakers and his cap that he wore backwards. His upper body was sweaty and i took a good look at his tattoo across his chest that was written "Respect, strength, loyalty" he had a sexy body that 8 pack and what not.... He was not buffed up, he was just normal...

He had a bottle of pump still bonnaqua water, he was breathing a bit heavy meaning he was probably at the gym... I lost focus on the cartoons i was starring at him, and he was starring at the TV and he has a tendency of biting his lower lip...

I'm probably fishing for the impossible im Hiv + ww can't be intimate.. He shifted his focus from the TV and to us..

Him: Are you Guys eating pizza? Me: Is there a problem?

He stood up and took the box Away from us..

Him: i thought we were gonna start eating healthy come on you Guys are killing me! Jeany: but i like pizza Me: me too..

Carl: Pizza is not healthy.... The door bell rang

Him: I'll be right back..

Me: That is completely not fair!

He came back after a minute or two with some woman. She was wearing a chef coat kindathing, she looked white but didn't look like she was from around here...

Carl: Girls i want you to meet chef Faustini she's a chef and originally from Italy.. She's Italian..

She looked a bit old.. Her:

Good afternoon

Her accent gave her away that she's from not here

Carl: She's been a celebrity chef all her life, she was once Zweli majola's chef you know zweli the media mogul and socialite that passed Away had a twin thami whose a millionaire now?

Me: I've read about him..

Carl: Good then believe that Faustini is a good chef She looked at Faustini...

Him: i want them to eat healthy 3 times a day.. I'm not go all green salads prepare their favourite meals but make sure they have less fats and more proteins... Like now they were eating a greasy pizza can you please rectify that and make them one that's healthy?

Faustini: Ofcause sir

Jeany: Can i make it with you? Faustini: Ofcause little miss??

Carl: Jeany... And that's Sammy

Faustini: Ofcourse little miss Jeany come along Jeany went with her..

Carl came and sat next to me..

Me: for your sake i hope she's good Him: i trust in her..

He leaned over and kissed me... I decided to say something while we were still kissing Me: Carl..

He ignored me and laid me back on the couch while coming ontop of me kissing me on my neck.. I didn't want him to stop but then k have to protect him..

Me: Carl stop...

He didn't stop his Hands were already on my breasts squeezing them.. Me: i need you to get tested..

He stopped and looked at me.. Him: i was gonna use a condom

Me: i know but we didn't know when I got infected..

Him: I'm not getting tested He got off me.. Me:

Why not?

He walked upstairs while i followed him...

Him: Because I'd rather die not knowing my status..

Me: Wow and this is the guy whose been preaching to me that i can live a long healthy life... When we got to the bedroom he picked me up..

Him: And you are!.. Wanna shower with me? Me: i already showered

Him: You already have my sweats so you need to shower again He started biting me on my neck, and i was giggling like a kid..

Me: Let's go get condoms then.. He went to get the condoms...

.
.

KRESI

I tried sleeping but i was turning and tossing couldn't stop thinking about Tpee.....I went was missing him soo bad shame that I took my phone and wanted to call him but unfortunately he called me first...

I wanted to answer but at the same time i didn't wanna answer..

He sent me a message that his downstairs in the kitchen, good thing i didn't get him that Restraining order... I was very nervous. I got out of bed and fixed myself i was very nervous but i went downstairs...

He was with Jeany in the kitchen they looked like they were

eating pizza. He had sat Jeany ontop of the kitchen counter and was standing next to her..

Tshepi: So you are the one who made this pizza? Jeany:

Yes..

Tshepi: i don't believe you.. It tastes good to have been prepared by this tiny hands

Jeany: i did it ask Fasini (Faustini) I stood there admiring that moment..

Tshepi: Let me have a bite of yours just to make sure She handed him hers, and he bit it..

Him: No i still don't believe it..

Her: Okay do you want my secret Apple juice? Tshepi: Uhm Ya.. Her:

Get it from the fridge He got it for her..

Tshepi: i hope you didn't pour salt like the last time Her: No silly i poured cayenne pepper..

Tpee: Wow Apple juice with Cayenne pepper He got glasses and she poured it for them... Her: cheers G..

Tshepi: Cheers

They both drank, from their facial expressions i could tell that it was horrible Jeany: it doesn't taste Good G, I'm already Drunk..

Tshepi: i told you G... Next time try a lemon juice now i have to detox you! with R500

He got his wallet and took out 500 and gave it to her

Him: At school buy yourself alot of sweets to detox yourself

Her: That's why you are my G She hugged him..

He took off his hat and put it on her..

Him: And this is your reward for preparing a good pizza you part of the fresh Boyz but I'll make you yours that says Fresh girl... Jeany: cool!! I always wanted to be fresh G!

He then noticed that i was standing at the door...

Him: My Niggarian girl why don't you go and watch TV.. Her: Are you gonna come?

Him: I'll be there now now Her: For shizzy homie..

He put her down and she started walking away Him: Hey aren't you forgetting something?

He crouched and she went to give him a hug and a kiss on his cheek..

Tshepi: i love you Her: i love you too..

She then walked away.. Just observing that i could tell that our child is gonna be one spoiledbrat!

PART 41 ANGEL: SAMMY'S HEART

April 9, 2016 [visionarywritings](#)

I don't know how the conversation was gonna go but I am willing to have it with him....Him: You look good

Me: Thank you

Him: i see you did your hair Me: After Last night i had too

Him: Kresi look i am sorry okay? I didn't mean to hurt you

like that Me: You need help Tshepi, you cannot keep on

comparing Me to Nissi..Him: Do you mean i need to see a shrink?

Me: Yes..

He laughed the Matter out a little

Him: I'm not gonna see a shrink I'm not crazy Me:

seeing a shrink doesn't mean that you crazy.... He got all

serious and his voice got a bit firm.. Him:

Kresi im not gonna see s shrink! I kept quiet and looked down...

Him: Okay if you want me to see a shrink then you gotta do something for me too I

looked at him

Him: Get that Prenatal Pertenity test and I'll go see a shrink

Me: Still don't believe that it's yours?

Him: No

I kept quiet for a while...

Me: Okay I'll do it.. I'll do your Prenatal Pertenity test! Make

an appointment and I'll do it! Him: I don't need to make an

appointment with my doctor just tell me when you ready..

I swallowed hard... Me: I'm ready now... Him: Then let's

go...

We walked out, i wanted to do this, so that if the baby dies it'll be in his conscious...

.

.

SAMMY

Carl and i we were dressing up after the shower session. What amazed me is that Carl showed no fear of sleeping with me...

I'd expect him to be a bit scared but he wasn't..

Him: i have some bad news I looked at him

Him: i gotta go to Mauritius for a week or so Me:

Why?

Him: Do you know Kush? The rapper? Me:

Ya i know him

Him: He died after releasing that weekend song.. The song has no video so his record label wanna do a video for a song so they asked to feature me in the video

Me: Wow that's great

Him: It is.. But we shooting the video at Mauritius Me: That's bad..

He came and put his hands around my waist..

Him: Its just gonna be for a week I'm sure you and Jeany can survive He said that while kissing me on my forehead..

Me: We probably will..

Him: i know you will yall are big girls

He said that while tickling Me and i was all laughing Me: Stop it! He then looked at me Me: What? He smiled

Him: Its nothing...

Sometimes it's hard reading this guy's mind..

Him: Let's go downstairs and see how Jeany is holding up..

..

I was sitting with Jeany, carl had went out to meet up with his crew..

Faustini was cooking dinner. Kresi walked in looking all drained... Me: Where are you coming from? Her: from the Doctor Me: Are you okay?

Her: Yaa.. Was just doing the Prenatal Pertenity test Me:

What?

Her: It's about Time i give that nigga what he wants Me: By putting your baby in danger like that?

Her: The baby is fine.. For now the procedure went well

Me: Kresi i told you that let's get this guy a restraining order

Kresi: Not now Sammy please..

She stood up and Walked away..

I wish Kresi could find a good man because I really don't like this Tpee guy his not good for her at all..

.

.

KRESI

It was now after 2 days and we had to return back to the doctor to get the results... I was nervous i know the baby is his but You know there's always that little fear..

Sammy was to accompany me, Tshepi and i we were gonna meet there... She came in my room i was all finished dressing up..

Her: Are you ready? I exhaled

Me: i think so

Her: Let's go.....

We went out and got to the range rover, and drove to the doctor's office...

Tshepi was already there waiting for me.. Sammy waited for me at the reception.... Tshepi and i went inside the doctor's office...

Dr: Are you guys Ready? Tpee: Yea

Tshepi also seemed a bit nervous.. Dr:

Should i open them? Tshepi: I'll open them

The doctor handed him the envelope.. He looked at it for a while before opening it... After a few minutes she opened it...

He looked at it for a while and then closed his eyes with his hand on his forehead. My heart started beating very very very fast... He then looked at me.

Him: 99.9% Match.. The baby is mine

That was a relief but i was mad at him for putting my baby in danger like that.. I tried holding back my tears but i couldn't.. I looked at the Dr Me: Is my baby gonna be okay?

Dr: have you experienced anything out of the ordinary? Me: No..

Him: Then the baby is okay.. But i would like to see you at least every 2 months. Me: Okay.. Are we done?

Dr: I believe so

I stood up and started walking out with Tshepi following me.. He held my hand.

Him: Kresi pl..

I turned around and slapped him..

Me: Don't you ever touch me! You wanted to know if the baby is yours now you know! What i want you to do is to stay away from me and my baby okay? I'll raise my baby on my own! I hate you Tshepi and it's over you hear me?? We done! Stay the hell away from me

I'm even gonn get you a restraining order!

After saying that i Walked away while wiping my tears..

PART 42 ANGEL: SAMMY'S HEART

April 9, 2016 [visionarywritings](#)

Kresi came to me she was crying, i hugged her..Me: Askies.... I don't really know what happened in there but whatever happened, I can see it broke her.. Tshepi approached us, i knew he had something to do with it..

Kresi: Can i have the keys, you'll find me in the car... I took out the keys and gave her then she walked out... I looked at Tpee.

Me: What happened in there? Him: the baby is mine Me: Wow? Really!

He looked the other way while exhaling loudly..

Him: Look I'm not gonna fight with about this just.. Take care of my woman and my baby.. He then left... I walked out to the car and we we drove home....

Kresi: I'm just gonna go and sleep a bit.

Her eyes were Red and swollen from all that crying she's been doing..Me: call me if you need anything

Her: i will...

She walked away.... I poured myself a glass of water then Carl and Jeany walked in it sounded as if like they were arguing..

Carl: How come i don't know anything about this Thato? Is he your Boyfriend?

Jeany: No. I told you his a boy that lives at school his my friend. He swims i play ballet then we do computer together..

Carl: So his not your bf? Jeany: Nooo!

Me: would it be a problem if it was her bf? Carl gave me a serious look..

Him: Don't encourage nonsense! I kept quiet..

Carl: Look Jeany i need to know this Thato guy, I'm going to invite him and his parents for dinner

Me: Why should you do that If they just friends? He looked at me again..

I raised my hands up a bit in form of "i surrender" Carl: i need his parents phone numbers

Jeany: i don't have his parents phone numbers.. Carl: Ask him

tomorrow...

Jeany: i will... Now can i go to the mall with my friends? The door bell rang...

Me: I'll get it

I walked up to the door and opened it some 3 teenage girls were standing there.. They looked old..

Girl1: Hi is Jeany around? Me:

Uhm yeah come in..

They came inside...

Girl2: Hey Carl Hey Jeany

Jeany: Hey Jess Carl: Hey girls..

Girl3: Are you ready to go Jeany? Jeany:

Yes i am..

Jeany started walking to her "friends" Carl cleared his throat..

Jeany turned back and kissed Carl...

Jeany: i love you and I'll call you Carl: Can i see your phone?

She reached down to her bag and took out an iPhone 6s+

Jeany:

Here it is and you on speed dial..

She put her phone back inside her bag...

Carl: So what are you going to do shopping with do you have money? She hit herself on her forehead..

Jeany: i forgot...

Carl: I'll be right back

Carl went out.. I swear those girls looked old. One even had a serious cleavage going on.... Carl came back with a stack of cash, and gave it to Jeany..

Jeany: Thank you

Carl: have fun and don't forget to call Jeany: i won't...

Carl: drive safely Jess i don't want anything happening to my baby girl Jess was all blushing while starring at Carl

Jess: i promise I'll drive safely..

They all walked out... I looked at Carl Him: something on your mind?

Me: How old are those girls Carl? Him: i don't 18,17,17...

Me: And they hanging around with a 7 year old?

Carl: They've always been fond of Jeany they from around this neighbourhood and they her friends

Me: And how much did you give her?

Carl: 10 000 i think... Me:

Are you mad?

Carl: Look Sammy Jeany is rich...I've always treated her like a Princess..Me: What other things does Jeany have, that are expensive?

Carl: i bought her a car I'm just waiting for her to turn at least 13 so I can teach her how to drive...

Me: What kind of a car?

Him: i bought her a lambo, Tshepi bought her a Mercedes-Benz, and Gesh bought her a bmw Me: What? Jeany is just 7??

Carl: They were just birthday presents..

Me: her bedroom looks expensive already she has her own collection of Nikey sneakers, her clothes i can tell that they designer clothes.. Carl you ruining her!

Carl: Sammy she's my everything and I should give her everything she wants! She was born rich and she's gonna die rich!

He walked away after saying that..

I stood there not believing what just happened.....

.
.

KRESI

I went through my things and found my grade 10 report card... Yes i dropped out of grade 10. I hope that i find a job with my Grade 10 report card... Now i just need to do my Cv and start looking for a job. I'm gonna raise this baby alone I've seen a lot of women raising their babies alone and the babies turn out fine. Plus I'm 2 months pregnant if i start working now and save up a couple of money, when i finally give birth I'll have enough money to take care of Me and my baby... Sammy walked in as i was sitting there..

Her: thought you'd be sleeping that's why I came to check up on you

Me: No unfortunately I'm not sleeping.. Her: What are you doing? Me: i wanna start looking for a job She came to sit next to me..

Her: Looking for a job?

Me: yaa i need to take care of my baby

Me: But Tshepi can help you, I heard he bought Jeany a Mercedes-Benz. Me: Tshepi is dead and buried to me! His just a sperm donor okay?

Her: Uhm okay...

Me: I'm gonna raise this baby alone without his help do you hear me? Her: i hear you...

I will raise this baby i really don't need Tshepi's help! Plus he never cared for this baby, he never wanted this baby from the start..

PART 43 ANGEL: SAMMY'S HEART

April 9, 2016 [visionarywritings](#)

KRESI

I have been going up and down trying to get me a job but let's face it, it's quite hard Doing job hunting with just grade 10. People with grade 12 can't even get jobs, but most of all people with degrees and diplomas cannot even get jobs.....

I couldn't even get a cleaning job, im even talking about cleaning toilets at the mall... So there i was sitting at some restaurant drinking orange juice and eating two chocolate chip Muffins. I got the money from Sammy, she's been the biggest supporter of me getting a job..

As i was eating, i was also going through my Cv. I have no experience in anything other than being a prostitute, grade 10 is the only thing i have off which i even failed. The highest mark i got was 50% and that was in isiZulu so you can imagine how the rest of my subjects went....

After failing grade 10 3times that's when I quit school and decided to be a prostitute... Home was the biggest factor of Me quitting school, especially with my mother's boyfriend who kept on raping me every chance he got. My mother pretended as if like she didn't see what was happening, she would even go as far as defending her boyfriend and said i seduced him..... My thoughts were short lived when my phone rang, it was Sammy... The way that bitch cared about Me i swear that she would make a great dad for my unborn baby (Sarcasm).....

Me: Hey Sam..

Her: Hey where are you?

Me: Just In some restaurant eating Her:

Did you manage to get a job?

Me: Unfortunately not... They at least want a matric certificate

Her: I'm sorry babe

Me: Its okay..

Her: So what's gonna happen now? Me: i Really don't know....

I said that while putting my hand on my stomach..

Sammy: i have a solution for this Me: What is it? Her: Promise you won't be mad or hate me?

Me: Sammy talk..

Her: Just promise me..

Me: Just talk!

I heard her taking a deep breath..

Her: I've been talking with Tpee and he has a post available of a PA.. Just tr..

Me: Wait, wait, wait.. Hold up leme get this straight. You been

talking with Tpee?? Her: Kresi he cares about you babe. He calls me everyday to ask how you doing Me: Wow Sammy i didn't think that you can betray me like this..

Her: Kresi it's not like that.. Me: How is it like?

Her: Tshepi loves you okay! And most of all he cares about you and the baby Me: went you the one who was spitting in his face and cussing him out?? Her: i know that but..

Me: But now you his best friend and discussing me wow!..

You know if you don't want me living with you, you could just say soo instead of teaming up with my ex..

Her: You being unreasonable! Me: Bye Sammy..

I hung up my phone.. I sat there for an hour thinking, and the honest truth is that i probably should reach out to Tpee. I can't have my baby suffering like i did

One thing that a parent wants is for their child to live a different life than the one that they lived. For the sake of my baby, I decided to swallowed my pride and go to Tpee's work.....

I got the "visitor" Card again from the security at the gate, they really was serious about who goes In there...

The receptionist still told me about making an appointment before i could see Tshepi and what she didn't know, was that I was carrying his baby.. So there we were arguing. Me: Just call him okay? He knows me!

I guess she was tired of arguing with Me, she picked up the phone and called him...

Her: Sir there's someone who wants to se... I understand sir but she says that her name is Kresi... Yes sir I'll do just do that...

She then put the phone down and looked at me.

Her: You can go through...

I looked at her then clicked my tongue and went to the elevator...

I got in and went straight to Tpee's office. I was tired the taxi dropped me far, it took me 45min to walk and get here..

I got out of the elevator and his PA wasn't there, her desk was empty, so i just walked into his office...

He was on the phone with an earpiece, he was also holding a golf stick with him. Looked like he was playing golf in his office because he had green artificial grass laid down and a hole for the golf ball..

I walked in and sat down, i was very tired, very thirsty, very hungry and very hot. The sun had no Mercy on me..

Him: ya... Hmmm... Yeah I'm still listening.... I think it's also better that we discuss this face to face Vic.... See you later... Bye...

He then took off the earpiece and sat down on his chair...

Me: i am here because I'm looking for a job. I heard that you have a post available for a PA and I'm applying for it.

I handed him my Cv.. He didn't even go through it, he was just looking at me while rocking his chair back and forth...

Me: i know that i don't have any experience but uhm.. I am a fast learner and i know that i can do this.

I tried avoiding eye contact..

He went through my Cv and i was just sitting there all quiet...

He then stopped and closed my Cv..

Him: Kitty don't you think this is crazy?

Me: I'm not here for any personal conversation I'm just looking for a job! Him: Stop being Crazy would you?

Me: Its okay I'll just go and apply somewhere else.

I stood up and Walked to the door, i was very dizzy, i put my hand on the door handle and closed my eyes... Him: Are you okay?

I shook my head no...

He stood up and came to me, he helped me sit on the chair again... Him: What's wrong?

Me: I'm just thirsty and tired..

He took His phone and dialled some number... Him:

bring 3 bottles of Energade in my office right now! He then put the phone down and then came to me....

He made me to stand up, and then he sat on the chair and made me to sit on top of him... He

was rubbing my tummy while my head laid on his shoulder

and he was busy kissing me on my nosebridge..

Him: I'm sorry Kitty please forgive me... I put my hand on top of his..

Me: Its okay

Him: i love you soo much Me: i love you too..

That TLC felt good..

.
. .

SAMMY

I walked up to the kitchen and noticed that Carl was talking to some female.. I didn't enter, i stood were they couldn't see Me while listening to their conversation.. Carl: i thought you changed your mind

Her: i didn't i was just still thinking about it, i mean it's a serious and difficult decision to make

Carl: That's true. But you do know how much you'll be benefiting in this Her: 1mill that's alot of money. It will take care of my mother and my son

Carl: I'll pay 500 000 before the procedure then I'll pay you 500 000 again after the procedure..

Her: I'm in.. I'd rather lose my life knowing that I helped someone and my family is well taken care off than to lose it on drug-trafficking

Carl: You the only match. You don't know how much you would've helped my sister Her: and i would've provided a better future for my son..

Carl: You know how your life is useless right? I mean doing this is better than dying in some jail in Thailand or Mexico Her: i understand

Carl: the surgery is in 3 days now don't disappoint me.. My sister is 7 she still has her whole life ahead of her, unlike you. Yours is useless you the most dirty civilian in the whole history of civilization.. Now go I'll contact you.. And remember, if you pull out I will kill you.

There's no turning back now! You must sacrifice your life for my sister's life. Her: i understand..

I seriously couldn't believe what i was hearing..

PART 44 ANGEL: SAMMY'S HEART

April 9, 2016 visionarywritings

After the girl has left, I walked in.... Carl looked at me.

Me: Please tell me what I've heard is not true Him: depends on what you've heard

Me: Carl you know i love Jeany more than anything and i wish that i had gotten the cancer instead of her..

He looked down

Me: But baby you going about it the wrong way. You cannot kill another life to save your sister's.

Him: I'm not killing her, she volunteered...

Me: i heard you saying you gonna kill her if she withdraws..

Him: Sammy i don't wanna argue about this

Me: Then don't! You might have money Carl but you not God.. You don't have a right

to take another life. If Jeany doesn't make it then it would've be her time to go.. His facial expression changed..

Him: What the fuck did you just say? Maybe i shouldn't have said that..

Him: listen here! I am gonna do anything and everything to save Jeany's life, I'm gonna make sure that she has the best life ever! Because the last thing i want is for her to be a prostitute!!!

He said that comment while walking out. It just dawned on me that although I'm not prostituting anymore but a prostitute is what I will always be.

.
. .

KRESI

I opened my eyes and realised that I was nicely laid down on Tshepi's couch with a mini blanket over me and my head was on a small cushion.. I sat up straight while Yawning and Tshepi walked in he was pushing a tray of food... It's like he read my mind because I was hungry!

Him: My timing was right Me:

It was right indeed..

He put the tray in front of me and the was a variety of food. Rice and chicken stripes, quater chicken&chips, rolls&coslow salad. Full chicken and chicken livers with a 2 litre fanta orange and 100% fruit juice... I noticed the food was from Galitos..

A certain waitress walked in too with Food platters nje Yooh it's like we were gonna feed alot of soldiers before they go to

war..

Me: So much food?

He put his hand on my stomach..

Him: i didn't know which food you were gonna like, but most of all i want my Poonkie pie to be well fed..

I put my hand on top of his..

Me: Well poonkie pie doesn't like chilli food, when we eat that we get a heart burn.. Him: Damn! I should've asked first

I smiled at him while putting my hand on his cheek..

Me: Its okay baby it's the thought that counts

Him: Then stay away from the chicken livers they the hot ones..Me: I'll eat rice with chicken strips..

Him: I've been thinking while you were sleeping I looked at him..

Him: You can work for me as my PA.. But when you 6 months pregnant you'll have to quit,because I don't want you over working yourself. and you'll only work from 7:00- 15:00 and i want you to take breaks in between.. Me: Wow you have all of that figured out.. Him: Ohw and i need your account number

Me: for?

Him: if you haven't noticed Kitty we wear Black here or black and white. So you need to go shopping for those clothes

Me: Okay

I took my phone out and gave him my account number.. Him: Leme get to it now

He stood up and went to his desk on his computer.. Him: You using capitec?

Me: Yes

Him: What's your limit? Me: I'm not sure

Him: Capitec is a cheap bank you gotta change that

Me: I'm happy with it Him:

You not cheap anymore This guy Mara..

Him: done! Immediate transfer

My phone beeped.. I checked and it was an Sms telling me that 50 000 has been transferred into my bank account..

I looked at him...

Me: Tshepi this is alot of money, I cannot accept this..

Him: I wanted to transfer 6 figures but your bank is too cheap they probably might freeze your account..

I looked at him..

Him: Look Kitty i see alot of pregnant women struggling out there. They can't even afford to eat food that they like because they can't afford it, they have to go through pregnancy alone and then raise their babies alone. Now I respect those women but you not one of them. You got me and I'm here to make

your life and your pregnancy easy and enjoyable.. I want you to eat anything you want, buy anything that you want... I want you and poonkie pie to be well taken care off take this as child support.. I don't want you bothering Sammy Carl... That was very sweet, i couldn't help but have tears....

Him: It really broke my heart knowing that you had to walk to come up here it's a 45min walk..

He came and sat next to me..

Him: You giving me something I've always wanted. I wanna support you and make sure that you enjoy your pregnancy. He wiped my tears..

Him: i love you, and I'm gonna be here for you. Wake me up at 00:00 am to stay up with you and i will... Wa..

A knock disturbed us....His receptionist walked in.. Her:

Sir, Mr Thobekgale senior is here to see you Tshepi stood up..

Him: Show him in please..

I stood up too and he held my hand.. A good looking old man walked in. Probably was on his late 50s. He was wearing a golf attire he had dreads too it dawned on me that it might be his father...

Tshepi: Vic

He went up and hugged him.. Him:

Its good to see you son.

Tshepi: Good to see you too old man, I see you've been

playing golf Him: Yes, Mr Smith hijacked me at home

Tshepi sat ontop of the table.. His father looked at me..

Him: Who is this pretty, rounded and dark skin woman blinding me..

I was very nervous, I've read about Vic Thobekgale. He is another Patrice Motsepe, he is worth billions because of Thobekgale Pharmaceuticals and his businesses overseas. He had the most beautiful Indian wife ever Mrs Rasheeda Poonah-Thobekgale. Tshepi: her name is Kresi

Vic: That's Kresi?

Tshepi smiled while looking at me.. Tshepi: The one and Only..

Vic: Its a pleasure to meet you, I've heard alot about you.. Me:

i... I've read alot about you too Him:

Come and give me a hug don't be shy... I

went up and hugged him.. Tshepi: i have something to tell you

Vic looked at him..

Tshepi: We about to have a baby soon. She's pregnant He

looked at me all shocked

Him: Do you know how blessed you are my girl? Tshepi: i don't think she knows

Vic: You carrying a Thobekgale the heir to my throne..I was all smiling and looking down..

Vic: Are you guys staying Together?

Tshepi: No she's staying with a friend of mine Vic: Why is that?

Tshepi looked down

Vic: i cannot have that.. She will move in with me and Moodley! She cannot live like she's homeless, no she must live like a Princess. Now call Jeff to accompany her to fetch her clothes.

He looked at me

Him: My child you coming to live with me in a palace..

Tshepi: I'll drive her to your place.. Vic: You better do!

He looked at his wrist watch, it was a Rolex watch this man is truly rich

Vic: i have to go Moodley has organised some dinner

Tshepi: When are yall getting married?

Vic: Still planning.. Tshepi: Okay

Vic: Let me go

He put his hand on my shoulder

Him: My soon to be wife and i, we'll be waiting for you

Me: Thank you

He walked out, and now i can breath.. Tshepi looked at me and

laughed Him: So how are you gonna live with him when you this scared of him?

I shrugged my shoulders..

Him: Let me pack up so i can drive you to his place, because he is not gonna let this go.. For the moment there i felt blessed, having a rich father in law like Vic who already worships me..

PART 45 ANGEL: SAMMY'S HEART

April 10, 2016 [visionarywritings](#)

I was sitting at the kitchen drinking 4 cousins sweet Rose. I was truly hurt by what Carl said to me..

He was not around, he went to fetch Jeany from mall..

Kresi walked in, she was with Tpee that was a first did they work things out? She looked at me like she didn't believe that I was drinking..

Her: Sammy what are you doing?

I shrugged my shoulders, i was already getting drunk.

Me: Did you guys work things out? Look at yall all happy about to have a baby soon. Life for yall must be perfect..

I said that while pouring wine in the glass. Kresi tried to take the bottle away, but Tpee stopped her.

Tpee: Let her drown her sorrows.

Kresi: This person is sick Tshepi she can't be drinking! Tpee: Let her drink, you'll thank me later

Me: listen to him Kresi, let me get everything off my chest.. I was now emotional..

Me: Carl doesn't love me!

Kresi: Don't be crazy Carl loves you with a his heart. Me: No! He tolerates me..

Carl walked in as we were talking about him. He was carrying Jeany who laid her head on his shoulder. She looked like she was sleeping..

He looked at me, gave me a death stare.. Me: Man of the hour I said that while clapping my hands..

He didn't say anything he walked upstairs..

Me: That's all he knows, Jeany this Jeany that!!!

Tpee: Let's prepare for the movie that's gonna follow Kresi: What movie?

Tpee: You'll see..

Carl came down after a few minutes... He walked slowly up to me and did something that all of us didn't expect. He pushed me and i fell on my back i fell with the chair.. Tpee: That drama!

Kresi: Carl Wtf?!!

I actually hurt myself while i fell.. He came to me..

Kresi: Tpee do something!

Him: This has nothing to do with me, so i don't see why i should get in their business! Carl was kicking me.. It was my first time seeing him this mad i was all crying and screaming..That Kresi came to stop him! My back was hurting were he had kicked me..

Kresi: What is wrong with you?!

Carl: I tried Kresi, i tried being patient with your friend but she brings out the worst in me!! Me: Go ahead Carl Kill me! I'm probably not gonna be the first person you've killed!

Because that's how low you are!

He came closer again but Kresi stopped him Carl: See what i mean? She has a mouth for days!

Kresi: Stop it Carl! Now I'm moving out today how can i leave Sammy with you knowing that i might get a call tomorrow that she's dead!

I tried getting up from the floor it was a bit difficult. I was wearing a short skirt that revealed my Bumshort as i fell.

Kresi: i think you need fresh air Carl: I'm good

Tpee: Let's go

Carl: No G, I'm good

Tpee: i didn't ask if you good or not..

Tpee started moving towards him and they walked out. Kresi helped me get up..

Me: He hit me Kresi

Kresi: i know bae I'm sorry

Me: We have moved from being prostitutes to being victims of domestic violence.. Kresi: We'll be alright..

She walked me to my bedroom and laid on the bed with me while i cried myself to sleep..

.

.

.

KRESI

After putting Sammy to sleep, I went to pack my things and then went to wait for Tpee at the kitchen..

They walked in after a long time of me waiting for them.. They were drinking redbulls and laughing, Carl was in a better mood than when he left.. Carl: Where is Sammy?

Me: She's sleeping

Him: I'll go and check up on her Me: No let her rest..

He looked down, i could tell that he was Ashamed of what he did..

Tpee: I'll go and put your things in the car.. He took my bags and Walked out..

It was just me and Carl now. Silence filled the room. He cleared his throat.

Him: i didn't mean to hurt her Kresi.. I was just.. Me: Just?

Carl: Jeany has started getting sick again and her surgery was moved to next I'm worried she won't make it...

Me: You suppose to confide In Sammy, seek comfort in her. Instead of hurting her because you also hurt..

Him: That's not how this is

Me: Its exactly how it is! You inflicting the same pain that you feeling on her, the only difference is that you hurting emotionally and you physically inflicting pain on her. Do you want her to be scared of you? Him: Ofcause not..

Me: You know I'd expect something like this from Gesh and Tpee but not you.. You don't seem like the abusive type, I'm actually disappointed.. I stood up

Me: If you can't handle Sammy please call me I'll come age fetch her, please don't kill her.. I didn't wait for him to answer, I walked up to the door and Walked out..

.
.

SAMMY

I tried sleeping but i was too much in pain. I slowly got out of bed and went to the bathroom, the was a big mirror there i took off my t-shirt and looked at my back. I couldn't see clearly but i saw red bruises. I wonder what got into Carl this is not him at all.. Did i push him too far??

I took off the rest of my clothes and took a long warm bath...

After bathing i wrapped my body in a towel and Walked into the bedroom. Something that was on the bed quickly grabbed my attention i Walked closer. It was rose petals shaped into a heart. Inside that heart was a ring box, i picked it up and opened it. It was a beautiful big diamond ring, that diamond was very big made me question myself if it was real or not...

The door opened and Carl walked in, i stood there looking at him, waiting for him to say something...

Him: i was waiting for the right time to do this.. Me: Carl i..

Him: Please let me finish.. He walked closer..

Him: I'm not doing this because I'm trying to buy your forgiveness, but I'm doing this because i realised that i need you in my life. You a big part of my life and i need you.. It's not that i cannot live without you, I actually can live without you but i just don't want too..

He took the ring from my hand and knelt infront of me....

Him: Jeany was supposed to do this with me but then she got

sick. Nevertheless I'll speak on her behalf... He looked at me..
Him: Sammy can you please make me the happiest guy In the
whole world right and be my wife. Would you Marry us?
I was standing there frozen. I seriously didn't know what to
say!

PART 46 ANGEL: SAMMY'S HEART

April 10, 2016 [visionarywritings](#)

I had said yes to Carl yesterday when he proposed then after that we had an epic night, just a night of passion although the bruises on my back were denying us to do certain positions, but we had a good night, using protection Ofcause.

It was in the morning, we were still in bed and i was starring at that that big Rock on my finger wondering how much it cost, and it was very beautiful. I wished my mother was here to witness all of this, I was truly blessed to have a man like Carl who loves me beyond my

Hiv, a man who is not even scared to touch me and make love to me. I didn't realise that he was now awake..

Him: Don't you like it?

I looked at him and smiled..

Me: i do like it, i like it alot I'm just wondering how much it cost you..Him: That i cannot tell you!

We haven't talked about him beating me yesterday, I think he was too ashamed of talking about it and I also didn't wanna touch on it.. He kissed me on my cheek.. Him: Thank you Me: for what?

Him: for making me the happiest man alive I blushed..

Him: i love you soo much and i promise to love you for as long as i live. I smiled and kissed him.

Me: i love you too

Him: Let's get ready, our appointment with the Doctor is at 9am..

Carl has got me an internist (General internist). An internist is a medical doctor that specialises in the diagnosis and treatment of Adults with complex or chronic diseases. I need to see the internist every month especially since I'm going to start with my Anti-Retroval therapy today so Carl thought it would be better to have an internist take me through such a complicated treatment....

I got out of bed and went to the bathroom. I took off my silk pink short night dress and looked at my body in the mirror,

especially my back. The bruises were still there and still painful.. He came and put his arms around me, gently kissing me on my neck then my shoulder and then my back. Was a bit painful when he kissed me on my back, i closed my eyes.. He whispered in my ear.

Him: i love you Sammy..

He was gently biting my ear, his hands caressing my body softly. It was painful and pleasuring at the same time. He started squeezing my breasts, and i put my hand around his neck as he was still kissing my neck and i was biting my lower lip while closing my eyes.. He let go of me, then stood next to me and stretched out his hand out to me. I could see from

his eyes that he couldn't wait to make love to me, i stretched out my hand to him too and he took it then led me to the bathroom again..

KRESI

I didn't stay with Vic. I was very scared of him, being in his presence nje I'll start trembling, my knees would get weak. But i guess that's what happens when you are rich, everyone respects and fears you... I was staying with Tshepi and today I was gonna be my first day at work, working as his PA...

I was wearing a black high waist skirt, with a white t-shirt, black stockings and black heels.. I

had this black long Brazilian weave i opened a line at the front and let it dangle on the sides. I had put on my make up and i was ready for my first day..

I went downstairs to eat breakfast, my little bump looked so cute in that tight skirt of mine.. Surprisingly Tshepi was not around it was 6:30am... The helper had already been set up with goodies i sat down and started dishing up, then ate.. I had moved from craving sweet things to craving spicy things. Hot wings from KFC, spicy chicken from Nandos or Galitos those were my cravings mostly although I'll get a terrible heart burn after eating that but i didn't care, as long as i get my spicy food then I'm happy. I can't forget Rice with chicken strips that is my favourite.....

This morning i had a normal breakfast just croissants buns, Apple juice and a fruit salad.. Tshepi walked in as i was about to finish eating. He was breathing heavily, he was wearing a vest and shorts with sneakers. He was sweating and had a squeeze bottle with him. Looked like he had been jogging.....

He kissed me on my forehead and sat down next to me... Him: Ready for your first day? Me: ya i think so

Him: Okay Dineo will show you how everything is done.

Dineo was his previous PA the one that I am replacing. She resigned because she wants to go back to school and study Pharmacy so she can come back and work as a pharmacist. The company is the one that's gonna sponsor her studies, they had given her a bursary... I stood up and Walked up to the kitchen, with him following me.

Him: Whoa! Wait!! I looked at him

Him: Are you wearing that to work? I nodded

He looked at me from head to toe, In this case from my weave down to my heels. Him: That skirt looks very tight can my baby even breath in there?

He put his hand on my tummy..

Him: poonkie pie are you still alive in there? I hit his hand Off..
He chuckled..

Him: But on a serious note.. You look... Ya you just look
(speechless).. I waited for him to talk...

Him: i don't know if I'll be able to keep my hands off you Me:
You'll have to try..

He came closer trying to put his hands around my waist i
slightly pushed him off..

Me: get away from me with all that sweat..

He forcefully pulled me closer to him all kissing on my cheek
first, i was all giggling Me: Stop it, you gonna make me to be
all smelly, sticky, and sweaty like you! He laughed..

Him: Fuck you!

Me: right back at you nigga!!! He let me go..

Him: i think your driver is waiting outside, and you have to be
at work by 7:30 I put my hands under his vest, while leaning
closer for a kiss.

Me: Well i was thinking that I can arrive late, since I'm
sleeping with my boss He got my hands off him..

Him: Nice try! Now go to work before i fire you..

He spanked me on my Ass very hard as i was walking to the
door, i turned back and looked at him..

Him: i love you too!

He said that while blowing me a kiss...

I took my bag and Walked out, indeed Jeff my driver was
waiting for me. Vic had bought me a MERCEDES-BENZ E-
CLASS it was silver in colour. I know how to drive but i don't
have a license so Jeff was to drive me until I get my license...

He opened the door for me and i went it...

It was my first time inside my car, it still had that brand new
smell. It had small screens at the back of the front seats so if
you sitting at the back you can watch anything you wanna
watch.....

I got to work, and Dineo was already waiting for me.. Her:
Morning Mrs Thobekgale

That has a nice ring to it, but I'm not Mrs Thobekgale as yet.

Me: Please call me Kresi..

She smiled

Her: Okay then Kresi..

We went to my table it was mixed with Tshepi's office, but you had to walk pass my desk first to get to his office.. She gave me two files.

Her: Today it's just gonna be orientation, so this files contain the client's information so i think it's best if you know our clients and what they do..

Me: Okay that's easy, i mean it's just two files

Her: Alot of files are still coming, I don't wanna pile you and confuse you with alot of work
Me: uhm okay I'll get started now..

Her: Can i get you anything to eat while you read through..

Me: uhm just get me snacks please
Her: No problem

She walked out, and came back with alot of snacks and sweets as i was reading through then after she left me in peace.....

I read through those files, was extremely difficult trying to memories all those names. I looked at the time it was now 9am, Tshepi is coming in at 11am Because he had a meeting out of town...

Someone cleared their throat as i was concentrating on those files, i looked up and a white handsome guy stood before me. He was wearing a black Jean with a red t-shirt that had a pic of a red bandanna.. He was also wearing shades.. Him: Morning

Me: Hi..

Him: Is Thobekgale in?

Me: No sorry his in a meeting out of town.. Him: When will he back?

Me: Around 11am i think.. He looked at his wrist watch.. Him: Thank you..

I went back to looking at my files, he stopped and came back again.. Him: Are you knew here?

Me: Yes infact i am, started working today Him:

Congratulations

He said that while sitting ontop of my table.. Me:

Thank you

He looked at my snacks then took off his shades

Him: i don't know how this is gonna sound but are you pregnant? Okay that was weird!

Me: Uhm yeah how did you pick that up

Him: Because my Wife use to eat the exact same snacks when

she was pregnant Me: You married?

Him: Yes and blessed with 3 beautiful daughters, but my first born passed on..Me: Ohh I'm sorry

Him: Its okay although it was a painful death

Me: What happened if you don't mind me asking?

Him: She was in love with this crazy Nigga who had her killed when she started obsessing over him.. He hired someone to rape her, and then kill her after. Her body was found in a bush, she was naked and tied up..

Me: That's a terrible thing! That person doesn't deserve to live

Him: That's not all, he shot my wife that she had Amnesia for a while. He then took advantage of that and started a fling with her, i even caught them together in bed.. Me: Yoooh this guy sounds like a psychopath

Him: You know what's worse? Me: No, what?

Him: i can see that my wife is still obsessed with him! And that is creating problems in my marriage

Me: Why is your wife doing that though? I mean you handsome i wouldn't risk my marriage lime that!

He chuckled and looked down.. He then looked at me.. Him:

You soo sweet, i never got your name.. Me: Kresi.. I'm Kresi

Him: Nice knowing you Kresi

Me: And what's yours?

Him: Im.... You know what I'll tell you later Me: Why not now?

Him: Because I'm still enjoying our conversation.. Me: So how do you know Tshepi?

Him: We come far, i mean very far... He then Kept quiet.

Him: You know i remember when this guy killed his other ex gf because she was starting to be obsessed with him.

He took out a pic and showed me.. I swear I'm gonna be traumatic it was a pic of a dead body. Was a female her body was Squashed looked like a car fell on her..

I gave him the pic, i even felt like vomiting after seeing that..

Him: Its amazing what other people are capable off out there..

Me: This guy is not a human being He needs to be killed in a brutal way for killing all this people like that..

The phone rang..

Me: Excuse me, i have to take this Him: Go ahead

He was keeping himself busy with my files while i answered

the phone and it was Tpee..Him: Hey Kitty

Me: Hey thought you'd be in a meeting

Him: That meeting is a lost cause..What are you doing don't
overwork yourself

Me: I'm not.. I'm just talking with your friend
Him: What friend?

Me: Your white Friend..

The friend signalled that i should give him the phone and i did..

Friend: Its me Homie were your Ass at, I'm waiting in your office chit chatting with your

PA... She's a very sweet lady and she told me she's pregnant... Cool I'll give her the phone.. He handed me the phone..

Tshepi: Kitty listen here i need you to get out of there now! His voice revealed fear, he sounded very scared..

Him: listen that's no friend of mine, that's Riley his my biggest enemy and his... I looked at Mr Riley Me: His what?

Tshepi: His there to kill you!

I let go of the phone, and looked at this guy whom i thought was Perfect

Him: What's wrong? I faked a smile..

Me: i.. I think i need the bathroom I stood up and started walking to door
Him: Sit the fuck down Kresi!

His voice wasn't sincere anymore..

PART 47 ANGEL: SAMMY'S HEART

April 11, 2016 [visionarywritings](#)

I swallowed hard and sat down as i was told too. If this is how I'm supposed to die then let me not die like this because this is a cruel way for a person to die...

Everytime when i find myself in such situations i think of Poonkie pie as i put my hand on my tummy..

This is the 3rd time where i find myself in a death situation as far as Tshepi is involved. He paced up and down...

Him: I'm not gonna kill you so just fucken relax! If his not gonna kill me, then why is here?!!

Him: i already killed his mother, his maid, and his Ex..

Me: Then let.. Let me go. I was very scared.

Him: in a minute or so, let's make him panic wherever he is..

He took a few of my jelly tots and ate them.

Him: Tell your person to stop provoking me in doing things that I don't wanna do! He stole my diamonds and now his busy with my wife again!

Me: busy with your wife?

Him: apparently they met a few days ago.

He gave me some pictures... Indeed it was Tshepi and Anathi looking all cosy in some restaurant.

Him: If he doesn't leave what's mine alone, then i will be forced to kill you! He took some jelly tots again

Him: You have a nice day He walked out after that....

This was a close one, I exhaled in relief with my eyes closed

Thinking to myself that Tshepi

has alot to explain!

SAMMY

We got to the Doctor's office and we were asked to go in as we have arrived just in time for our appointment...

It was a beautiful private practice I'm sure its worth alot of money..

We got into the office, and it was a blonde female she didn't look that old. She was wearing a short dress with heels and a white coat. She smiled at us..

Her: Carl it's nice to see you Carl: likewise

She stood up from her chair and came to hug him, after hugging they just held each other's hands..

Carl: You look good, i see his treating you right Her: He is indeed

I was standing there like a statue busy watching that bold and the beautiful moment.. Her: How have you been?

Him: I've been good can't complain Her: I'm glad

They were looking at each other right in the eye like they were about to kiss or something, i was really disgusted by the whole situation....When Carl acknowledged my presence he let go of her hands, then put his Hand on my waist..

Carl: Ohh uhm this is my fiancé Sammy, and Sammy this the Internist i was telling you about Dr Smith..

I faked a smile...

Her: Its nice to meet you Sammy Me:

Me too.

She looked at Carl

Her: Wow after all you can be committed to one woman only

Carl kissed me on my forehead..

Carl: only a woman who has my heart..

Her: Let's get started We sat down..

Her: So Carl has Already explained everything to me about your status I wonder when did that happen..

Her: in a government institution you start using ARVs when your CD4 count is below 350, but in a private institution you start using ARVs immediately..

I nodded

Her: Did you eat?

Me: i had a sandwich or two Her: Then that's good

She stood up and got me the pills. Was 3 bottles of pills the other one was big..

She opened them and made me drink. One pill looked brownish and the other 2 were brown.. She explained the pills the other one was to prevent the after effects that the pills are gonna Bring...

Carl: Can't we find something good for her? What kind of medication do they use overseas?

Smith: I'll check for you.. Carl: is that all?

Her: Yes and please make sure that she eats healthy and drinks her medication, she must also exercise.. If there's sexual intercourse involved please use a condom Carl: Ayt we'll do that..

Her: Then I'll see you next month.. Smith: Next month it is..

I took my treatment and we left... KRESI

Tshepi walked in, he looked ready for action but mostly he looked very worried. He came straight to me..

Him: Are you okay? Did he hurt you? Me: I'm fine

Him: How did security not pick this up!

I was still thinking about the things that Riley told me about Tshepi... He came and crouched next to me as i was sitting on the chair, he put his hand on my tummy... Him:

How did i not see this coming! Me: We are fine, he didn't hurt us..

Him: This has gone too far i am gonna kill him!

I kept quiet..

Him: Do you wanna take a day off and go home?

I shook my head no..

Me: Do you realise that this is the 3rd time were i almost got killed? The first two times it was you and the 3rd time is your enemy!

He buried his face in my thighs, then after looked at me..

Him: I'll never let anything happen to you or poonkie pie, this time around he just caught me off guard.....Mr Duvenhage walked in as we were talking, Tshepi stood up.. Tshepi: He fucken came here in my office to scare off my woman!

Duvenhage: Did he hurt her?

Tshepi: No he didn't but what if next time he does

Duvenhage: I'll pay him a visit Tshepi: you better!!

SAMMY

The pills were making me Hella dizzy and very nauseated that Carl had to stop the car a few times for Me to vomit. We were supposed to go out for lunch but in the state that i was in, we headed home..

He was driving with one hand, and the other hand he was holding my hand...I just couldn't wait to get home so I can sleep.

We finally got home and he helped me get out of the car.. Him: Are you okay?

Me: i just wanna sleep

He put my hand around my waist as we walked to the house...

We got in and he walked me upstairs. As we were about to go up the stairs, we had a voice speaking behind us..

Voice: Nice of you to finally show up!

We turned around and it was Riley, he was holding a gun. Carl: How did you get in?

Riley: the question you should be asking is why I'm here! We looked at him

Riley: Care to join me for a drink in the lounge?

Carl held my hand and we walked to the lounge and sat down while Riley helped himself to Carl's whiskey..

Riley: finest whiskey that you got, how old is it? Carl:

Why are you here?

I was now laying my head on Carl's shoulder

Riley: i know that you drew up my house plan for Tpee and Duvenhage! And don't even try to deny it

Carl kept quiet for a while..

Carl: Can you let her go and then we'll discuss this alone.. She has nothing to do with this..

Riley: Fine she can go

Carl kissed me on my forehead then whispered in my ear Him:
Go upstairs, hide out somewhere and call Tpee or Gesh

I nodded and stood up then started walking upstairs.. I heard
the gun go off twice... I stood there and felt a stinging pain in
my back Carl: Sammy no!!!

He ran up to as i was collapsing on the floor and he held me, i
noticed that his hands were now bloody..

Him: No.. No.. No.. Please stay with me!!!

PART 48 ANGEL: SAMMY'S HEART

April 11, 2016 [visionarywritings](#)

All i saw were white lights flashing as i looked up, i felt like i
was moving i looked beside me and Carl was holding on to the
stretcher and there was a doctor too with a nurse.. I heard their
voices but i heard them from far, before i blacked out..

KRESI

It was now around 17:00 and we had just arrived home. I
couldn't stop thinking about what Riley told me about Tshepi,
all the people that he has killed, especially the picture i saw of
that Girl's Squashed body that really traumatised me...

He sat ontop of the bed, i think he noticed that something was
bothering me. I was at the dressing table taking off my
earrings..

Him: Scream at me, shout, yell, hit me i don't care Kresi but
please your silence is really piercing through my heart.. I turned
around and looked at him.

Me: Riley told me things about you... Him:
What things?

Me: You killed people..

He rubbed his eyes with his hands...

Me: What happened to lady moghana and please tell me the
truth Him: Kresi..

Me: Just tell me the truth for once! (shouting)

He couldn't believe that I raised my voice at him, maybe i shouldn't have, is he gonna kill me too?

Him: i killed her and burned her body along with the house. I put my hand over my mouth..

Me: Ohh my God, who are you?!

He stood up and came to me, tried to touch me but i acted cold towards him. Me: Don't touch me! Just don't touch me right now!

I took a few steps to the bed, walking away from him... I now had my back facing him.. Him: i kill people because it excites Me, i kill people because they piss me off, but most of all i kill because that's who i am...Kresi I'm better than what I used to be, i.. You and Poonkie pie you the most important thing in my life.. Not only do you have a hold of my heart but you gave me a Gift that no woman has ever been able to give me and that is a baby...

Tears were streaming down my cheeks, i love him but his a monster what if he turns on me..Me: i think we need some space

Him: Don't start Kresi.. Me: i need some time to think I said that while facing him..

I could see he was getting a bit pissed, everytime when i raise the issue of me moving out he always wanna kill me..

Me: i need to move out for a couple of days He shook his head..

Him: You are not moving out!

I walked up to the closet, he followed me..Him: Did you not hear what i fucken said? His tone of voice changed..

I ignored me, he grabbed me by my arm and pushed me hard but luckily i fell on the small

couch In the closet he came to me and grabbed me by my weave... Me: Tshepi stop! Think of Poonkie pie..

He let me go.. I was scared for my life and the life my unborn baby.. His hand formed a fiest, he clenched his teeth.....

I was standing there hoping that what I've said will calm him down, and it did.. Him: Fine if you wanna move out then you gonna move into my father's house..I didn't care were i was going but as long as i was away from him..

Him: I'll drive you when you done packing..

I packed my clothes and also changed my clothes. I just put on a summer dress with sandals...

I walked downstairs with my luggage bag.. He was drinking whiskey.. He put the glass down and Walked up to the door and i followed.....

The drive to his father's house was quiet and awkward, no

word was said he was just playing music very loud.....
We got to his father's house and Yeses!! That house was big
and wow! I felt like i was walking in one of those houses in
Beverly hills..
We walked into the kitchen and ya this place was very very
beautiful it left me with my jawhanging..
Tshepi: Vic! Moodley! Anyone home? (yelling) Vic and
Moodley showed up from the lounge..

Moodley: Moon pie it's good to see you..

She approached him and Tshepi touched her feet.. She then came to me i tried touching her feet but she held me back.

Her: You don't need to do that..

Vic hugged us too.. Then he looked at the bag.. Him:

Are you guys here to visit?

Tshepi: Uhm no.. Kresi is moving in for a couple of days i

hope you guys don't mind Moodley: Ofcourse not, how can you even ask that..

She put her hand on my shoulders...

Her: We were just having dinner I'm sure you must be hungry I nodded..

We walked to the dinning room and sat at the table..

It was like they were going to feed an army.. There was beef stew, chicken stew, dumplings, pap, rice and alot of salads..

I started dishing up.

Her: You can eat however you want, remember you eating for 2 people now.. Ya living here im gonna be fat!

Tshepi walked in..

Him: Kresi i have bad news I looked at him

Him: Carl just called me, Sammy is in ICU Me: What.. What do you mean?

Him: She was shot by Riley!

My heart froze, nothing made sense to me.

I walked out to the kitchen, my knees were weak.. Tshepi: Are you okay?

Me: He wanted to kill me now Sammy Tshepi:

Riley is shit!

I looked at Tshepi

Me: i want you to kill him! His eyes widened

Me: i seriously want you to kill him!

I don't know what got into me but i felt the need that this Mighty Riley should die now!

April 12, 2016 visionarywritings

It's been a while now since I've been living with Vic and Moodley. They were extremely good to me and i really enjoyed living with them, they made me feel at home. Tshepi was

trying so hard to stop being abusive, he wanted to get me and Poonkie back in his life. Unfortunately Sammy was still in a coma we were all praying for her to wake up soon.

I prepared for work as always, I was still Tshepi's PA and i was enjoying my job it was very Nice.

I was now 4 months pregnant i had gained weight or maybe it's because i eat alot, you can never find me not Eating.

I felt poonkie pie moving, that meant one thing we hungry. I'm starting to think that poonkiepie is taking after Tshepi because he can be quiet the whole day, not move not kick you'd even think that his dead but come nighttime my womb becomes a soccer field that i can't even sleep.

I was wearing a black dress that had a gold belt, but the belt wasn't tight. The dress was a tight hugging dress. I didn't have any weave i had box braids that were long and they were black and white.

My feet were swollen so I wasn't doing heels anymore just sandals and pumps.

What's new again is that now i have a license so i can drive me to work... I took my bag and Walked downstairs, those stairs wear me off at times.

Moodley was preparing breakfast with our helper. Me: Good morning

I was already tired

Moodley: You poor Thing Vic must do something for you to move up and down easy Me: No i think it's good exercise don't worry

I sat down. Moodley had prepared me a full English breakfast.

Her: here's your breakfast Me: Thank you very much

I was very hungry so i just went H.A.M (Hard as a motherf***)..

After breakfast i realised that i didn't have earrings on so i Walked back upstairs to put on my earrings. My perfume had been moved from the dress table to my bed, i thought that was weird or did i use it and forgot it on the bed.. Weird things have been happening in my bedroom sometimes ill leave the room

messy then come back and everything has been put back where it's suppose to be, but i think that's the maid doing her job... I went back downstairs and got to my Mercedes-Benz and drove to work. I got there and went to my office had to prepare Tshepi's diary... I arrive at 7:00am then he arrives at 8:00..

As i was busy with his diary i heard someone walking in, it was a woman because I could hear the heels... They stopped at my table and i raised my head to see who it is and it was Anathi.. The nerve that this bitch has showing up here after what happened... She was surprised to see me there. Her: Good morning

I didn't answer, I just looked at her.

Her: Are you his PA or you just holding the Fort for someone?

Really? She can't even see the name tag i put on written "KRESI MAHLANGU" and written PA underneath.

Me: i work here

I don't wanna lie, i was scared of her i mean that bitch kicked my Ass, she buttered me, she turned me into a beauty sandwich.

Her: I'm here to see Tshepi

Me: Do you have an appointment? Her: No

Me: You can't just walk in and see him you need to make an appointment.. She looked at me like she wanted to kill me immediately..

Me: should i make an appointment for you? Her: Yes, for tomorrow morning

I opened the diary and wrote her name.

Me: You wanna see him in relation to what if you don't mind me asking? Her: How is it any of your business?

Me: Well it is my business if you wanna see my bf especially if it's not business related Her: Who said it's not business related?

Me: What business do you do Anathi other than beating people?

Her: Are you trying to piss me off?? I kept quiet and looked at her

Her: Look I'm not gonna explain myself to a prostitute! And you need to get off your high horse because Tshepi will Dump you like a used Sanitary pad when his done with you..

This girl Mara, who the hell does she think she is..

I stood up, she looked at me and noticed my big tummy her jaw Dropped..

Me: will that be all? Because i really wanna go to the rest room. You know my bladder is getting weak.

Her: Uhm yaa we done, I'll come back tomorrow I guess.. She walked up to the elevator and went in... I sat down again.

Tshepi walked in at 8:00 carrying a chocolate cake, i am obsessed with anything that has

chocolate in it. My cravings are just all over the place, today i crave spicy things next week I'm craving sweet things...

He wasn't wearing a suit, he was wearing all Grey the "Fresh Boyz" swag not forgetting his hat. He looked very wow sometimes I think to myself that im blessed to date such a hunk..

He put it on my desk... I ignored him.

Him: Hau i thought you were gonna jump on it. I shook my head no

Me: I'm on a diet He laughed

Him: You on a what??

I looked at him, then went back on what I was.. Him: Fine then I'll just throw it away

It looked yummy with all those chocolate pieces..

He took it, and Walked away..Me: Stop

He stopped. I stood up and went up to him, i took the cake from him..Me: Thank you very much

He laughed again

Him: What happened with the diet?Me: We'll start tomorrow He looked at my body while biting his lower lip..

Me: What?

Him: This pregnancy is surely treating you well God look at that Ass! I blushed....

Him: I'm standing here thinking to myself the things I would like to do to you Me: Stop it, we at work!.. Abs speaking of work why aren't you wearing a suit?Him: Because I'm the boss!

He came and stood behind me with his hand rubbing my tummy..

Him: And that cake is for poonkie pie, it's her birthday today Me: birthday?

Him: His turning 4 months inside your tummy Me: Wow you keep track?

Him: His my child i have to keep track We both think that it's gonna be a boy..

He was paging through his diary, he also checked if he has meeting tomorrow..

Him: Meeting with Anathi tomorrow?Me: Yeap

Him: Which Anathi? Me: Your girlfriend

Him: i only have one girlfriend and she has the biggest Ass I've seen! I laughed.

He tore that page and threw it in the bean..

Him: if she comes tell her i don't have time to entertain her kind Me: oho she be threatening to beat me up and calling me a

prostituteHim: Tell her you my prostitute

Me: You really want Anathi to kick my Ass?

Him: i must really teach you how to fight so you can kick her Ass!

Me: i can kick Ass, just that Anathi's Ass is hard to kick
He laughed.... Mr Duvenhage walked in, he cleared his throat..
We looked at him.

Tshepi: thought we were gonna meet later They shook each
other's hands

Duvenhage: Ya I'm not here about that.. He looked at me

Him: Hey Kresi

Me: Hey Duvenhage when are yall killing Riley? He looked at
me confused. Tshepi changed the subject

Tshepi: What's up dog?

Duvenhage: my wife... She.. She wanna see you. Tshepi looked
dumbfounded

Tshepi: Your wife wanna see me? She doesn't even know me

Duvenhage: I'm also surprised she wanna see you together
with Kresi Me: uhm regarding what?

Duvenhage: She's saying something about having a message
for you Tshepi: What message?

He shrugged his shoulders...

Me: Well we can go now it sounds important Tshepi: ya let's
go, we'll take your car

We took my car keys and Walked to the elevator then went
downstairs... We bumped into Carl downstairs so we dragged
him along..

Duvenhage was driving, Tshepi was seating with me at the
bank, while Carl was sitting at the front..

Me: How is Sammy? Carl: Still the same

Me: ive been meaning to go and visit her Carl:
You should..

I was surprised when we drove into a mental institution. Tpee:
Your wife is here?

Duvenhage: Unfortunately yes

We all got out and Walked in. Being in that place just sent
chills down my spine... It was creepy all those people and what
not..

We got into the reception and waited for some Nurse to come

and fetch us.. She came after like 30min

Nurse: Mr Duvenhage she's ready to see you She looked at us.

Nurse: i see you brought company

Duvenhage: This is the people she's been saying she wants to see
Nurse: Ohw please follow me

We followed her and i was looking around thinking to myself that this is not a good environment for a person to be in...

She unlocked the door.. I was praying that she's not dangerous.. We walked in, i held Tshepi's hand...

She was sitting on the bed with a pen and a pad busy writing.

She was beautiful, but had

scratches on her face especially her cheek Duvenhage: What

happened to her face? Nurse: She scratched herself, especially at night so now when she sleeps we must restrain herself from hurting herself..

Duvenhage: thought the medication was working Nurse:

sometimes she hides the pills under her tongue.. Duvenhage:

Thank you Nurse I'll take it from here

The nurse walked out leaving the door open. Duvenhage went to sit next to her, while kissing her on her cheek..

Duvenhage: Hello sweetie pie, how are you feeling today? She didn't say anything

Duvenhage looked at us.

Him: This is my wife her name is Naledi but we call her Zee..

He looked at her again.. Him: I've brought them along Tpee and his girlfriend..

She raised her head and looked at us looking at Tshepi..

Naledi: You more cuter than how she described you Tshepi: Who?

She went back to writing.

Naledi: your Ex Fiancé Nissi, she's standing right in front of you Tshepi was shocked..

Tshepi: Excuse me what the fuck did you say?

Her: She did tell me that you stubborn and you might not believe me Tshepi: Duvenhage what the fuck is going on?!

Duvenhage looked at his wife. Duvenhage: Sweetie where do you get this? Naledi: Nissi, she visits me everyday. She has a

couple of things to say to him.. Tshepi: That's it I'm leaving!
Naledi: She says the first time you saw her naked in the pool house you wrote her a note that said "dope titties nini" she even told me about the first fight yall had where he threw a pot at you and you broke your arm, she still remembers how Angry you were when you find out she had an abortion, she..

Tshepi was breaking his eyes were filled with tears... Tshepi:
I'm not gonna listen to this!

He walked out.. She looked at me... Her:

She would like to touch your tummy Me:

What?!

I felt some warm feeling around my tummy going in circles

Naledi: She's saying it's not a boy, it's a girl... She says she's
sorry that she shifts your things at times just that sometimes
you can be clumsy..

She looked at Carl.. Her:

Carl?

I saw Carl getting a bit scared... Him: What you wanna say
about me?

Her: Nothing i saw your name you have it on your cap. She
looked at Duvenhage

Her: i wanna go to the bathroom.. Duvenhage: I'll call the
nurse Duvenhage stood up and went...

She went back to writing in her note pad

Her: maybe try a different approach when talking to Sammy...

Carl looked at her.

Carl: Is Sammy dead?

She looked at him and then went back to her pad..

I was looking at her thinking to myself how she knows all of
this things.

PART 50 ANGEL: SAMMY'S HEART

April 12, 2016 [visionarywritings](#)

This girl was talking things that were true. I don't think that
Tshepi would've acted the way he acted if what she said
wasn't true. What played through my head was that what is she
doing here? If she's not crazy, because to me she didn't look
crazy at all. She looked like someone who has a gift of talking
to the dead.. Carl: is Sammy dead?

She kept quiet and kept on writing in her note pad, i don't
know what she was writing... Carl: i need to go and check up

on Sammy..

Carl walked out... Now it was just me and her in the room. I was a bit nervous i mean she has scratches on her face, what if she attacks me..

Me: uhm.. Is Nissi still around?

She looked at me and giggled a little then went back to her note pad.. Duvenhage came back with the nurse.

Duvenhage: Where is Carl?

Me: He left

My phone rang, i took it out and it was Tpee.. Me: i have to take this

Naledi: Tell him to come back. He really needs to set his Fiancé's soul free. She has been trapped here in the world of the living for quite too long, she doesn't belong here she has to cross over!

Me: How can she cross over?

Her: Tshepi needs to hear what she wants to say to him, after that then she can cross over.. Nurse: That's it, let me walk you to the rest room then after give you your medication.

The nurse held her hand, and they walked out...she stopped by the door.

Her: for you and him to be happy he needs to hear what Nissi has to say.. She then walked out..

Duvenhage: I'm so sorry about that, i don't know were she gets all of this.. Me: Is your wife a seer? Does she have a gift of speaking to the dead?

Duvenhage: i don't know, I have never heard her speak of such things before. It's my first time hearing her saying such things. My phone rang again.

Me: i have to go i think Tpee is waiting for me

Him: Thank you for coming and tell Tpee i said thank you too I smiled and Walked away.....

The security guards walked me out. When i exited i saw Tpee approaching Me and he did not look happy.

Him: I've been calling you!!! Me: Sorry i was still talking..

Out of nowhere he slapped me, that was very strange i put my hand were he had slept me and i looked at him. Not believing that he actually slapped me.. Him: Go get in the fucken car!!! (shouting)

I didn't say anything i Walked to the car, Carl was sitting at the back i got in the front. I was starring out of the window the whole way back to the office with tears running down my cheek and with my hand on my tummy.

I believe everything that Naledi said especially when she said Tshepi and i we'll never be happy until Tpee listens to what Nissi has to say.. I closed my eyes and said a prayer in my heart..

“Nissi wherever you are please help me, you know this monster better than i do”

We got to the office and Carl got into his car then drove to the hospital... Tshepi and i got into the building and went up to our office.. Tshepi: You can go on lunch..

He gave me my car keys, I'll see you at 14:00.

I took the keys and looked my at my wrist watch, it was 13:00... I went to the Cafeteria.

We have King pie, kfc, mugg&bean, then we have an Italian restaurant and also a French restaurant.

Ya this building was states of the art.

I bought a pepper steak pie, then i also got me Streetwise two. We all have cards that we buy food with and the company will just deduct from your salary at the end of the month.

I sat down at the tables and ate, i also got me some fanta orange. SAMMY

I slowly opened my eyes.. I was very dizzy and everything appeared twice. I could hear the machines beeping.... I had an oxygen around my mouth..

I saw the Nurse standing across Me. She looked busy she was writing something...

I tried lowering the oxygen from my mouth but i couldn't locate exactly where it was.. The nurse started noticing that i was awake

I could hear her talking and coming to me.. I couldn't make out what she was saying.. I tried keep my eyes opened but i was too dizzy and too sleepy so i closed them again.

KRESI

I finished eating my lunch then went back to the office.. I had to prepare myself for the meeting that Tshepi has called.

I took my diary and pen, then walked to the seminar room... I remembered that i have to set up notes for everyone so i went to get the notes and put them by each chair..

I took my place and waited for everyone to come in while I opened my diary...

Everyone started getting in we were like 10 and now we were waiting for the boss.... I was sitting next to the M.D of the company Amy Rowland..

She's 45 years old and has been with the company for 10 years.. Her: How far along are you now? Me: 4 months Her:

Can i?

She wanted to put her hand on my tummy and i allowed her.

Her: Wow now you reminding me of my pregnancy..

I smiled..

Tshepi walked in, and took his seat. Tshepi: We can start!

He didn't greet us, didn't even apologies for being late..

The head of marketing stood up.. His name is Jason Miller his gay and a good friend of mine..

He stood at the front and set up his laptop, connecting the cable to the big screen.. We all kept quiet as we waiting for him.

Tshepi: You should've long connected your laptop before we all got here! Now we must wait for you.

That statement Made Jason very nervous Him: Sorry sir i...

2 minutes passed with Jason's laptop still loading.. Tshepi: Are we gonna start anytime soon?

Jason was nervous and Glued to his laptop he was even literally Shaking.. Tshepi: Now he can't speak!

I looked at Tshepi i really didn't like his attitude.. Me: Let me help you..

U stood up..

Tshepi: Kresi sit down! Me: I'm just trying to help

Him: if you do his job whose gonna do you job?! Just sit the fuck down and do what the

company pays you to do! And that is taking notes in meetings!!

I sat down again, I seriously couldn't believe Tshepi's behaviour... It's like he just changed overnight

PART 51 ANGEL: SAMMY'S HEART

April 17, 2016 [visionarywritings](#)

ANGEL

I slowly opened my eyes again, I was feeling dizzy and weak like i did earlier...

I looked around and saw Carl sitting beside me he was on his phone...I moved my hand and touched his. He looked at me immediately and he looked relieved that I was awake... Him: Hey.. You are awake..

I wanted to lower my oxygen.. He stood up Him: Let me get the Doctor

He ran out.. I finally located the oxygen and lowered it, my

eyelids were heavy i thought that i was gonna pass out again...
Carl came back with the Doctor, i felt that my body was aching
and it was heavy..Dr: Welcome back.. How do you feel?
He started shining the small light in my eyes..

Dr: Your pupils are contracting that's a good sign... Me: im..
I... Feel tired..

My voice was even gone, it was very scratchy..

Him: You've been in a coma for too long..

He started writing in my file.. Carl was holding my hand and
kissed me on my forehead.. Me: i wanna sit.. I wanna sit up
straight..

Carl tried helping me to sit up straight, the doctor yelled out.

Doctor: No don't touch her! (yelling)

When he was trying to help me i felt an excruciating pain in my
back, the pain looked like it

was arising from my spinal... Carl: Are you okay??

Dr: You cannot move her you not experienced. She just had a
major operation In her back, we had to remove the bullet from
her spinal cord. I was in serious pain i started crying..

Carl: Can't you give her something for the pain? Dr: I'll have
to give her morphine!

The Dr gently moved Me...

Dr: She's bleeding.. You need to go

The Doctor took Carl out while he called nurses to come...

.
.

. #KRESI

Tshepi's behaviour had changed completely after the visit we
had earlier on to go and see Naledi...

The meeting didn't go well, he ill-treated Jason in front of the
whole staff and Jason has never
been this humiliated he cried the whole day...

Tshepi was now sitting in his office, his chair was facing the
window he looked like he was in deep thoughts..

I cleared my throat.. He didn't look at me, i decided to knock
and that's when he turned and looked at me..

Me: Just wanted to let you know that I'm going home, it's
already 15:00 He nodded his head, and i Walked out...

I didn't go home straight i passed by at the Cemetery, i really
needed to talk to Nissi.....

I got out of my car and went to her Grave...I didn't say anything at first, i just looked at her Tombstone. I really don't wanna end up like her someday...

I wanted to say something but words failed Me, so i decided to get in my car and drove home.....

.

. #ANGEL

I was now seated in a semi-upright position, I was still a bit drowsy from all that Anaesthesia. I don't know what you talking he Doctor did, maybe he re-operated me i don't know...

Carl was feeding me some porridge that had vitamins but it didn't taste Good atall.... Him: Come on one last spoon Me: im fine..

He put the bowl away.. I noticed that he didn't have his Bandana wrapped around his wrist Me: Where??? Wha..

I pointed at his wrist, he looked at his wrist then looked at me.. Him: I'm no longer a blood..

Me: Riley let you go.. Just like that??

Him: Not really... Me:

Then what?

He smiled at me..

Him: Let's not talk about Riley right now, let's talk about you getting better..

I wonder what Carl is hiding because i know very well that Riley will not let him go that easily..

.

. #KRESI

We were now seated in the dinning room table having dinner.. Dinner at this house is served at 17:00 latest 18:00..

It was just me and Moodley, Vic went to attend some business overseas.. Moodley: How was your day?

Me: It was fine thank you, and yours?

Her: busy, planning the wedding and all that.. Me: How are the wedding prep..

We suddenly heard noise coming from the kitchen, sounded like people were Arguing.. Tshepi showed up in the dinning area, followed by our security guard..

Tshepi: You can't tell me shit like that! This is my home, i grew up in this house so don't give me shit!

I started getting scared, i don't like him at all when his like this, and he looked a bit sloshed.. Moodley looked at the

security guard..

Moodley: Its alright

The security guard went..Tshepi looked at Moodley

Him: What's this shit about me not being welcomed here??

Moodley: Only when you drunk because you know that you like starting up trouble!

Tshepi: This is my home! I'll fucken show up here whenever i want too..He then looked at me..

Him: Get your things we going home! I looked at Moodley
Moodley: She's not going anywhere with you especially when you in that state! Tshepi still looked at me, his voice getting more and more firm..

Him: Go upstairs and get your fucken clothes! I was trembling, i shook my head no..

Him: Kresi i don't have time for shit! I dealt with alot of shit today so I'm not ready for your shit!

Moodley stood up..

Moodley: I'm calling the Cops

Tshepi: Sit the fuck down Aunt Moodley

She walked up to the phone, when she picked it up Tshepi was already behind her.. He struck her at the back of her head with those hard whiskey bottles.. Moodley fell, she was bleeding from her head... Tshepi walked up and picked up on the statues and literally smashed it on Moodley's face..

I was sitting there with my hand over my mouth.. I then felt some cramps in my tummy..

PART 52 ANGEL: SAMMY'S HEART

April 17, 2016 [visionarywritings](#)

Tshepi had now called a few of his people to come. One was standing next to me guarding me, he had a gun with him but he wasn't Pointing it at Me, he was just wiggling it around...

Tshepi was standing not far from Me he was talking to another guy..

Tshepi: We gonna make it look like she just packed up and left. She got cold feet about the wedding and decided to run away. She felt guilty about marrying her late sister's husband. Him: That can work

I was looking at the side, i didn't wanna see Moodley's lifeless body laying there in a pool of blood. Her face was deformed, Tshepi repeatedly smashed the statue on her face.. He had blood in his clothes and sneakers, even a bit on his face and hands..

I saw some nigga walking in.. He could be Vic's age.. He wore exactly like how Gorgie Zamdela would wear in isidingo. He even had the hat to complete his look...

He was with Cops, and what i assumed to be a detective. The detective was white, i wondered who called the Cops.. They moved to Tshepi and gave him handshakes.... Tshepi spoke to the man that was wearing like Gorgie Zamdela Tshepi: Thank you for coming Uncle Vee Him:

No problem, what happened here?

Tshepi: i just got a bit carried Away you know how I'm like Uncle Vee looked at Moodley's body, then he looked at the Cops.. Him: Send them in..

One cop went out, he came back with some two men who were wearing white overalls and gloves.. They had a body bag with them..

They went up to Moodley's body and put her in the body bag and went with her... I sat there with tears in my eyes, Moodley is a peaceful and humble soul she's the most kindest person I've ever met in my whole entire life and she didn't deserve to die like that.. If Tshepi could kill his Aunt without even thinking twice then what about me?? What about poonkie pie???

My baby is not born yet but she has seen a lot of cruelty that's been done by her father (figuratively)

Tshepi was not a human being, the more i looked at him the more i got scared of him.. Did Nissi go through all of this too?? Uncle Vee looked at the Detective..

Him: Van Rooyen make this go away, my nephew cannot go to jail for this.. Van Rooyen: Its already gone, but what's the plan?

Tshepi: Gonna say she ran away, didn't feel good about marrying her sister's husband anymore..

Uncle: That's a good idea!

Van Rooyen: She'll just be another missing person's case

Tshepi: I'll transfer you your payment.

Van Rooyen: Don't sweat about that, take your time.. Uncle

Vee: Thank you Van Rooyen Van

Rooyen left with the other two Cops.

Uncle Vee looked at me.. He then looked at Tshepi Tshepi:

Ohh that's Kresi

Now he acknowledges my presence..

Uncle Vee came to me and took off his hat and kneeled on one knee next to me.. Him: Do you know how blessed you are to be carrying my Nephew's child?

Ohw great Tshepi told him.. I didn't say anything..

Him: You really are gonna be treated like a queen.. No one is gonna touch you, no one is gonna dare to touch you!

So he really is Tshepi's uncle?? He then stood up..

Uncle Vee: You can go, take her home she's seen enough. And for someone in her state she's not supposed to be stressed or in shock.. Don't worry I'll make sure everything is clean before Vic comes home

Tshepi: i know when i have you, I'm alright

They hugged me then Tshepi came to me and extended his hand to me.. I was scared of this guy so i really didn't wanna be on his bad side.. I gave him my hand and he helped me get

up... We walked upstairs and he asked me to pack my things, i didn't argue i did as i was told..

We then walked up to his car and had someone drive my car... I was starring out of the window, it was now raining. I looked at the rain drops on the window.. There was silence in the car....

We got home and Tshepi told me to walk inside he'll carry my bag for me.. I ran to the house and punched In the code then the door opened and i Walked in... Tshepi followed after me.. He put his hands on my arms and started rubbing them like he was creating heat..

Him: Why don't you go and take a warm bath, and I'll cook soup for you..I flashed a fake smile..

Me: Okay

He kissed me on my forehead, and then kissed my tummy..

Him: i love you Kresi Me:

i love you too..

ANGEL

I was better than how i was yesterday I meant the dizziness Ofcause.. It was in the morning and Carl walked in, he was with Jeany.. Jeany ran up to me..

Her: Angie..

Me: Hello cup cake

She was trying to get in bed with Me.. Carl: No Jeany sit on the chair

She sat down on the chair.. Carl kissed me on my forehead

Him: How are you feeling today?

Me: the dizziness is gone but my body is aching.. The doctor walked in..

Him: i didn't realise that you had visitors He then looked at Jeany

Him: Miss Jeany are you ready for your surgery next week?

Jeany: Yes just Jojo said I'm not gonna feel pain

Dr: She's right

Jeany: Because you guys are gonna kill me first, then when you done you gonna Bring me back to life.

Dr: You very smart for a 7 year old The Dr came to me..

Him: There's one last test i need to do

He lifted the sheet from my legs, and ran a pen on my legs.. Dr:

Can you feel that?

Me: No..

He pressed hard..

Him: Now?

Me: Just a little..

Carl: Why can't she feel any sensation in her legs?

Dr: Your bullet didn't touch your spinal cord, it missed it by a few inches. Carl: So what's the problem?

Dr: the surgery and the impact of the bullet caused trauma to your spinal cord. As soon as the swelling goes down you will be able to walk again... Carl: So she's gonna be a paraplegic for how long?

Dr: not for that long, she just shouldn't put pressure in that Area until it heals, then after we can start with physio..

Carl: How much would physio cost? Dr: it depends

Jeany: But we cannot afford physio (physio) we broke! I looked at Carl

Me: What does she mean we broke? Carl:

Jeany we not broke!

Jeany: You sold all my cars, that's not fair!

She laid her head on her arms which balanced on my bed and she started crying.. I looked at Carl demanding an explanation..

PART 53 ANGEL: SAMMY'S HEART

April 17, 2016 [visionarywritings](#)

ANGEL

I really needed to understand what Jeany said that we broke.. I looked at Carl..

Carl: Jeany why don't you go to Elna in the reception she has chocolates for you... Dr: I'll pass by at the reception and drop you off there..

The Dr took Jeany's hand and they went.

Carl sat down next to me. I looked at him, and he held my hand.. Me: is it true Carl?

He looked down..

Him: Yes

Me: How? What happened?

Him: i left the bloods remember? So all the money i was left with i spent it on your health and Jeany's health. Jeany has been in and out of hospitals too, her treatment is way too expensive. Her Oncologist doesn't come cheap too her hospital bills her operation that's coming up next week. And then your hospital bills, your Operation because they had to get a surgeon to remove the bullet, and this hospital costs alot of money...

Jeany has cost me all

that money which amounts close to a million... Me and Jeany we have cost Carl alot of money..

Me: couldn't Tpee and Duvenhage give you a share of the money for the money?

Him: i wasn't part of the plan remember? Me: But you drew up the plan

Him: Doesn't work like that my Angel.. What are we gonna do now???

Me: i cannot believe what are we gonna do?

Him: i don't want you worrying about that Angel, i just want you to focus on getting better Me: But..

Him: I'm a man I'll make a plan..

I looked at him, he truly wanna take care of Me and Jeany.....

KRESI

I was out jogging that morning, before i could go work now i was going back to the house... I got there and Tshepi was standing at the kitchen drinking coffee..

My heart skipped a bit, the evilness in this human being sends chills down my spine..... I took off my headsets.

Me: Good morning

I said that while walking away.. Him: Wait, wait, wait come here.. Ohw God what does he want?

I went up to him.. He held my hands and looked at me while biting his lower lip.. Him: Shit those leggings look good on you..

Me: Thank you.

He pulled Me closer and kissed me.. No Matter how hard i try to hate him but i can't, i truly love this twisted monster of

mine.. I loved him from the very same day that i met him.. I loosened up as he kissed me, slowly going down to my neck. You know when you pregnant all those hormones play with you...

Before i know it I'm ontop of the table, with my legs high up on the table, and he came to me... Before he entered me he just went down on me and sucked Me.. His soft warm tongue

playing around my clit and my hole i felt myself going a bit insane... He stopped before i could come and he slowly entered me... I was dying to have him inside of Me..

He started off in a slow pace, he was holding on to my thighs... He then started increasing his pace, going harder and faster making me scream that probably even next door they could hear me.....

After a while i came, and then he came after me but he didn't come inside of me, he pulled out and actually came on the floor.....

After our session he picked me up and we went upstairs to bath...

.

. #ANGEL

Carl and Jeany had left but they promised to come back later. Carl had to run errands and Jeany was going to Jojo's place.... I was coughing that day, had been coughing since the previous day that now it was painful in my lungs when i had to cough.... The Doctor came in...

Him: I thought Carl would still be here.. Me: He just left now now..

The Doctor seemed a bit off.. Me: What's wrong doctor? He didn't answer he just exhaled... Me: Doc?

Him: Your medical bills had not been paid for this month.. That didn't sound good

Him: You have 3 days to settle your medical bills.. I looked at him.

Me: What happens if we don't pay in time?

Him: Then we'll have to send you to a Government institution.. It's not like i have anything against Government hospitals but i am not fond of them because the medical care there is not up to standard..

Me: There's nothing we can do? Him: I'm afraid not.

I heard this is the 3rd best private hospital in South Africa and i was getting the best medical care ever, leaving here will be deadly for Me..

Doctor: i have to go and attend other patients, I'll send a nurse to come and take you for some fresh air.. You need to get off that bed before you get bed sores....

KRESI

I was now done preparing for work. Tshepi just wore a regular outfit..Me: You not going to work today?

He came and put his hands around my waist..

Him: I'll be working from home today.Me: Then why am i going to work?

Him: I'm also wonderingHe kissed me..

Him: I'll be in the study workingMe: Okay

He walked out.. I went to the closet to get my sandals when a box fell..

I picked it up and pictures from that box had fallen on the floor.. I picked them up and looked at Them it was Nissi's pics, i stood there and looked at those pics until i remembered what Naledi said, that Tshepi must see her...

Since Tshepi doesn't wanna go, i probably should go and find out what Nissi wanna say to him..

PART 54 ANGEL: SAMMY'S HEART

April 17, 2016 [visionarywritings](#)

A week had passed and my health was deteriorating, the coughing got worse and worse everyday. I was even Losing weight. The operation was taking its own time to heal but at least my legs weren't numb anymore, but everytime i put them down I'd get a tingling sensation..

The Doctor advised Me to walk with crutches more so my legs could go back to their normal state.

I was supposed to be out of here in 3 days because Carl had not paid my hospital bill, but the doctor bought us time....

I was sitting on my bed, i was weak and drained today.. I didn't want nothing i had no energy at all to do anything..

The doctor came in..

Doctor: Do you wanna know the results now or should we wait for your Boyfriend?The doctor suspects that i have TB so he took my sputum for testing.. Me:

You.. You.. You can tell me..

He opened my file and went through it, then closed it again...

Him: As we suspected you have TB

All this conditions that occupy my tiny body, it's just too much..

Doctor: You are an immunosuppressed patient, that's why you get all this opportunistic diseases..

Having TB didn't scare me, I've been through hell for the past few months. I was shot,

then Hiv, then now TB. I was really tired, i wanted to die now.

I can't put Carl through this anymore, at least if I die he will be free.. I have cost him alot of money, and ontop he has to take care of Jeany her surgery is just close by... Dr: i have more bad news..

I looked at him...

Him: if Carl doesn't settle your bill, in 2 days time i will have to transfer you to a Government institution...

I loved it here. It's a good private hospital, i like how kind the Nurses are, i like how they

treat the patients. I've heard alot of fucked up stories about Government hospitals and how the Nurses treat their staff and i don't wanna be a static of being treated like that....

Doctor: Angel i you need to go to a Government institution at least there they will give you treatment that you need.. You cannot be stuck up in here where you don't even get treatment...

The hospital has refused to give Me treatment because of the fact that I'm still owing.. Me: Can't we... We.. Can it.. Make it a palliative care

Him: No you need treatment!!

Carl entered as i was Arguing with the Doctor like that.. He came closer to me, he was with Jeany..

Dr: You cannot get closer to her, please go to the receptionist And tell the receptionist to ask any Nurse to give you gloves and a mask..

Carl: Why??

Dr: She has TB, and TB is airborne.. Especially Jeany she cannot be here right now please take her out..

Jeany: But i wanna see Angel (Sad) Carl: I'm coming..

He took Jeany who was kicking and Screaming she really wanted to be with me..

Me: ive been.. There's a pain in my spinal cord..

He came and turned me over a bit then checked me.. Him: Ohh Dear!

He then moved away..

Him: You have an infection, the part where we operated you is rotten!! There's Yellow pus coming out...

He walked over and leaned on my small table..

Him: Angel you really need to go to a Government institution... Carl: She's not going there

He came to us..

Dr: Where are your gloves and Mask? Carl: You don't have any..

Dr: Please go up to her and check where we operated her.

Carl came and turned me over, it was a bit painful i screamed a little.. Him: Sorry

He looked at my Operation for a very long time, then After he helped me sit in my position again..

Carl: i don't understand why the hospital is refusing to give her treatment! Dr: That's how our policy work

Carl: She has the right to any medical services be it government or private. Yes she cannot afford but as you can see she's grave sick you cannot refuse her treatment!!!! (screaming) Carl was very furious..

Dr: That's how it works.. settle her bill so she can have the treatment that she's entitled too Carl: I'm asking for an extension

Dr: You've already asked for 3 extensions.. Look you can go on the second floor and speak with the hospital manager his probably gonn tell you the same thing... The Doctor looked at his pager..

Dr: I'm needed in Theatre

He then looked at Carl... Him:

Do the right thing..

He then walked away.. Carl pulled up a chair and held my hand against his Forehead while tapping his foot... Me: Carl..

Him: i don't wanna hear it Angel.. I will come up with the money!!

Carl is very stubborn too, i also don't wanna go to the government hospital, but now it looks like we have no choice..

KRESI

I was now 5 months pregnant. Tshepi's Behaviour towards me had changed, especially since he was seeing a therapist.. I was only 5 months pregnant but i was an elephant, and my feet were very swollen. I wasn't working anymore, Tshepi thought it was

better if I stay at home now....

I was laying back on the couch and had my laptop with me, i was busy downloading movies...

Tshepi entered, he wasn't around he had a session with his therapists...

He moved my legs and put them on top of him as he sat down, and started massaging me... Me: That feels goooooood..

He looked rather disturbed...

Me: Are you okay? What happened

Him: Nothing we just talked as always.. 4000 gone just by talking!

Me: Its working for you, your behavior has changed since you started seeing a therapist. Him: You know that i know how they do this shit right? They nod when listening to you talking as if like they understand what you talking about but in actual fact they don't..

Me: Tshepi...

Him: Do i really have to do this Kitty?

Me: Remember you doing it for me and Poonkie pie.. Him: Fine..

I went back to downloading.. Him: Kitty

Me: Hmmmm?

Him: Do you think Duvenhage's wife is cray cray?

Me: No i think she has a gift of speaking with the dead, just that people don't wanna acknowledge it..

Him: Okay Me: Why do you ask?

Him: Just asking.. I looked at him..

Him: Fine.. Today the therapist touched a very sensitive topic. She wanted me to talk more about Nissi

Me: How was it talking about her after so long? He shrugged his shoulders..

Him: i think i wanna see Duvenhage's wife, i wanna know what Message she has for me from Nini..

My jaw Dropped.

PART 55 ANGEL: SAMMY'S HEART

April 17, 2016 [visionarywritings](#)

I thought that Tshepi was joking about seeing Duvenhage's wife. Although we didn't immediately went to visit her, but we did after a few weeks we had to go with Duvenhage because they was not gonna allow us to see her without his permission...

That place was still creeping me out, just being in that place and seeing all those people, you'll never know if they will attack you or not.. Tshepi held my hand as we walked up to Naledi's ward...

The Nurse opened for us, and she was in bed writing as always. I wondered what she was writing..

Duvenhage went up to her.. Him: Hello my Angel..

She was very responsive to him this time around, she looked at him and smiled. Duvenhage brushed her hair..

Duvenhage: You look better today Her:
i feel better

Duvenhage looked at us, then Naledi looked at us too... Naledi:
You back

After that she went back to writing in her pad..

Tshepi: the last time i was here you... You talked about my fiance having a message for me.. She kept quiet for a while...

Her: That's true

Tshepi: i.. I would like to know what she has to say.

Tshepi was very nervous, he was literally Shaking. I could feel as i was holding his hand.. Naledi looked at her, then went back to her pad..

Naledi: But you a non-believer

Tshepi: i know and I'm sorry about what happened the last time i came, but i would like to know what she has to say..

Naledi kept quiet.... The room was engulfed with silence, no word was exchanged.... Naledi: She's glad that you here

Tshepi: She's here?

Naledi: Yes standing right beside you.. I saw his face lighting up..

Naledi: She's saying she's proud of you that you getting help, she knows it's not easy but she couldn't wait for this day to come were you actually get professional help.. Naledi was still on her pad as she was talking..

Naledi: She's saying that all this years she couldn't cross over because she wanted to make sure that, you find a suitable partner one that will love you for who you are and not what you are. She's very thankful for the time she spent with you whole she was still alive, although not all of those moments were nice but there's good memories that you created for her that she's always gonns cherish..

I saw Tshepi's eyes being filled with tears, i have never seen this side of him..

Naledi: She's saying that the only way that your relationship with Kresi will work is if you stop making Kresi pay for her mistakes. She's sorry that she aborted your baby but now you have another chance to be a father and be the best one. She's sorry that she married Brandon she's sorry for every pain that she caused you...

She's saying let go of that Anger and hate. Don't look at Kresi and think she's gonna do the same for the fact that she's still here means she loves you. I was getting emotional too..

Naledi: She's saying she will forever love and miss you, but it's Time you create new memories with your new lifetime partner..

Tshepi couldn't hold himself back, he buried his face in his hands..

Naledi: She's leaving now because there's nothing holding her back anymore. . Tshepi stood up..

Tshepi: Excuse me

He walked out.. I was still shocked at what happened.. Me:

Wow, i said that as i wiped my tears..

Naledi looked at me while smiling.

Her: Go after him, he has something important to tell you.. Me:

Thank you..

She just smiled.. Duvenhage pulled her closer and hugged her while kissing her on her forehead..

Duvenhage: i love you Naledi: i love you too.....

I walked out to look for Tpee and he was standing outside, the last time i exited the door to

approach him he slapped me... I was scared so i stood there..

After a while he turned around and saw me.. I won't lie i was scared he gets very angry where Nissi is concerned... He

walked up to me, his eyes were a bit red and teary i could see he had been crying..... He held both my hands..

Him: I'm so sorry.. Me: Its fi...

Him: Let me finish please...

He rubbed the back of my hands with his thumb..

Him: All along I've been angry at her and i took out my anger on you while you did nothing wrong. Ever since we met, all

you wanted was to love Me, and in return you wanted that Same love..

I couldn't stop the tears from falling..

Him: Please give me another chance to be a better lover.. He then placed his hand on my tummy..

Him: Give me a chance to be a father to poonkie pie I looked at him while smiling through those tears Him:

Would you please do that?

I couldn't answer so i nodded my head.. And he kissed me,
then poonkie pie kicked.. Him: What was that?

I think he felt the kick because he was close to me..

I held on to him, poonkie pie was seriously playing soccer..

Him: Are you alright??

I took his hand and put it on my tummy..

Him: Is she?

I nodded my head..

Him: Wow..

Me: And you just called her a she..

Him: Well Nissi said it's a... I know it's a girl I smiled and his phone rang.. He took it out.

Him: Its Carl.

He answered..

Him: Yeah man?... Whoa calm down... Angel did what?!! He looked at me..

Him: Why didn't you tell me you know i would've given you the money!... Just stay there we coming

He hunged up...

Him: Shit we have to go..

Me: What's wrong with Angel?

He held me by my hand and we went to his car.. ANGEL

I was now grave sick. I couldn't get out of bed, i have lost weight i looked anorexic. I was just a skeleton you could actually see the bones in my face popping out. It's like i had no blood and life in me.. What was more worse is that i couldn't even go to the toilet anymore i was on that Adult Nappy...

I couldn't speak anymore, all i did was just run my eyes around. I've been waiting for Carl to pay my hospital bill but i couldn't wait any longer.. The hospital couldn't transfer me anymore because i was very sick...

I was glad that Jeany was not allowed to see me anymore because i know she would be traumatised for life if she saw me in this state...

The Nurses would come and change my Nappy and bath Me they were still so sweet.... I was laying in my bed when a bright light was shinning in my room. That light was followed by my mother's presence she looked like an Angel she was wearing pure white and she was glowing.. She gave me that warm smile of hers..

I looked at her...

Her: I'm here to fetch you my darling, you have suffered

enough it's time you find rest... That's all i needed i needed rest...

As she extended her hand on Me Carl busted in, he was with Kresi and Tshepi.. They had masks on and gloves...

Carl lowered his mask, he looked soo happy..

Him: Tshepi is gonna pay the bill sweetie, you finally gonna get the treatment you need.. I looked at my mom she shook her head...

Mom: Its time Angel, we need to go before hell tries to snatch your soul away.. God heard your prayers when you were asking for forgiveness and repenting he forgave you.. You a new being now... Let's go home

I wasn't gonna let Carl watch me die.. With all the strength i had i spoke.. Me: Wat.. Water!

Carl: You want water? I nodded..

Him: I'll get you water..

He quickly went out.. Kresi came to me... She was crying as she held my hand with those latex gloves and spoke through that mask..

Her: I'm so sorry my friend, i should've come to see you She was crying..

Me: B... Bye!

I gasped as my soul left my body, whoever said dying is a painless experience they sure Lied.. Your soul fights to stay in your body while it has to go.... I saw myself getting out from the bed. I was wearing pure white. I didn't feel pain anymore but i felt cold..

Me: Mama i don't feel pain Her: i know..

I looked back and i saw my lifeless body laying there..

Kresi was crying uncontrollably Tpee was holding him back i couldn't make out what they were saying.. I saw the doctors rushing in then Carl rushed in too.. When he saw what was happening he dropped the glass and ran up to me... He tried waking me up but i didn't... The doctor pulled the sheet and covered my lifeless body....

Tshepi was torn between Carl and Kresi didn't know who to comfort although he was crying himself..

I knew that i cannot leave Carl like this, his not ready to let go i wasn't ready too.. Although we won't be together physically but I'll always be with him in spirit..

This last insert might've made you cry or hurt you or saddened you, but don't feel sorry for me. I'm in a better place now I'm at peace no more suffering....

My story should teach you that love sees beyond the naked eyes. Love doesn't see HIV or prostitution or any mistake that you have made in your life, but love always sees perfection.

Who said I was supposed to have a happy ending?? No everything has its consequences and I should've known that Prostitution came with deadly consequences..

I AM ANGEL BIYELA AND THIS WAS MY STORY

THE END